

Інформація

Адреса змісту:https://www.webnovel.com/book/one-piece-king-luffy_27526276205774805###

Одна часть: Король Луффи.

Аниме и комиксы

108 глав

2,0 млн просмотров

Автор:

Red_tomatoes

4.18

(37 оценок)

Краткое содержание

Luffy encountered a large vortex when he went to sea and drowned in a wooden barrel.

A Blue Star Soul, took this luck by chance. Occupying Luffy's body, and becoming the new Luffy.

As the Background king of the sea, Luffy originally thought this was the beginning of His plot armour maxed, but he never expected the big adventure system to come!

On this day, the sun god awakened in the East Blue!

“Savage monkeys from the Kingdom of Goa are rampant in the East Blue!”

“The vicious straw hat pirates have entered the great route!”

“The despicable straw hats have destroyed the island of justice!”

“Admiral of the Straw Hat Fleet, Monkey D. Luffy is approaching the Chambord Islands!”

“Your Majesty the Supreme Sun God, arrived at your faithful Marie Gioia today!”

When Luffy completed the dominance of the great route, he faced the news interview.

"You are the king of the world now, what do you want to say to the world?"

"I would like to thank the crew members who accompanied me along the way. They supported me silently under my body."

The reporter looked behind Luffy, and the girls of Ying and Yan snickering at Luffy. He couldn't help imagining what it meant and scolding secretly in his heart.

For support you can visit my ko-fi page

https://ko-fi.com/red_tomato

think of this as a parallel world where Luffy's soul is replaced by someone with greater plot luck leading to such a tragedy thus occupying his body and becoming one.

Casual read

#author -dolly and dot

Chapter 76 The Pirate Ship That

Descended From The Sky, The

Next Destination: Sky Island

The Sunny and Merry sailed out of the waters of Alabasta, heading towards their next destination, braving the wind and waves.

Vivi stood at the front of the deck, her sea-blue hair being blown about by the sea breeze.

The boundless ocean brought a pleasant mood.

"Ah, the sea, I'm back!" Vivi sang happily.

The people on the deck laughed one after another.

Nami walked over.

"Actually, there's something I want to ask for your opinion on."

"Nami..." Vivi turned around and saw Nami, instantly feeling guilty.

["Oh no, I'm such a bad woman..."]

"Should I just confess to Nami? Will I be forgiven?"]

She hesitated and secretly glanced at Luffy, only to see him with an expression of watching a show.

[That damn guy.]

"What's wrong, Vivi? Are you feeling unwell?" Nami blinked her eyes.

"No... it's nothing."

Vivi quickly put away her unnecessary thoughts, unable to confess, and could only temporarily keep it from Nami. [I'm sorry, Miss Nami!]

"What did you want to ask for my opinion on?"

"It's like this..."

Nami also glanced at Luffy and explained everything about the prisoners and the second team in detail.

"I see... I understand," Vivi said after listening.

After hearing it, Vivi pondered for a moment.

"Luffy, what do you want me to do?"

Upon hearing this, Vivi paused to contemplate.

"Luffy, what do you expect of me?"

Her lips curved into a smile, her eyes and eyebrows forming an expression as radiant as a blossom in the morning sun. [Teasing me, huh?

You're such a big, bad egg.]

Luffy helplessly said, "It all depends on your heart. You can decide how to deal with them. Incorporating them as members of the second team is just one suggestion."

"I want to meet them first."

"I'll take you there."

Luffy had just finished speaking when Vivi ran over on her own.

She used Moonwalk and easily jumped onto the Merry.

Luffy: "..."

Almost forgot that this girl knows Moonwalk and Finger Pistol.

Hmm, speaking of which, I should quickly teach her the other four techniques as well.

Nami has them, so Vivi should have them too, otherwise it could cause problems...

Thinking this, he also jumped over.

Merry, deck.

"What is this?"

When Vivi came over, she happened to see Sanji, Zoro, and others gathered in a circle.

In front of everyone was a huge conch shell?

Two eyes were lit up like mosquito coils, resembling ancient ammonite creatures.

"I don't know... Usopp just caught a strange thing earlier." Sanji tapped it with his hand, pondering, "I don't know if it's edible."

"I don't think it's edible..." Vivi broke out in a cold sweat on her forehead,

"Look, there are iron handles on its sides, is it a hatch?"

"It really is!!"

Several big men only noticed this now.

At this moment, Luffy walked over and remembered when he saw this thing.

"It's a special submarine."

"Luffy."

Everyone greeted him.

Then, with a clang, the huge ammonite shell opened, and a man with a simple appearance crawled out.

"Oh, I thought I was done for. Hello, hello, hello~"

He rubbed his head and nodded to the people around him one by one.

"Who are you! Suddenly popping out like that, scared the hell out of me!"

Bartolomeo clenched his fist.

Everyone looked at the man one after another.

Under his simple appearance, his small eyes occasionally flashed a cunning light.

"Oh dear, oh dear, excuse me, let me introduce myself."

The man touched his head and bowed in apology:

"I am a ladybug mail-order delivery person who can be called upon by a phone call to deliver goods to you. Please give me your guidance."

The tone was so much like a salesperson that no one doubted it.

"Ladybug mail-order delivery, what is that?" Zoro looked disgusted.

"Yes, when I was delivering goods on the submarine, I suddenly encountered a strong typhoon. It blew me to the east and then to the west, and in the end, I perished!"

Laisles described the situation with exaggerated gestures, and everyone rolled their eyes.

"Hahaha, I'm really sorry, and thank you for saving me. To express my gratitude, I will give you this popular shaking stick from our company!"

He took out a shaking stick from the submarine, which had iron balls on both ends. As long as you hold the middle part and shake it gently, the weights on both ends will make the stick swing back and forth continuously.

Everyone: "..."

Usopp said, "What's the use of this thing? It's just useless."

Johnny and Yosaku nodded in agreement,

"Is your company a junk shop?"

"NONONO... our company focuses on customer experience and fully understands customer needs. Since you don't like the shaking stick, we also have this!"

Laisles took out another item.

It was a pink pig toy with handles on both sides of its body, allowing people to hold it and slide it back and forth on the ground, exercising their waist strength.

"This is a popular product, the well-known 'Apua Pua Slide Slide Fun'."

Then, there was a grandiose boast, turning an ordinary children's toy into a high-tech fitness equipment.

Zoro couldn't help but comment, "Who would need this..."

Chopper and Usopp's eyes were already sparkling.

There's a chance!

Laisles' money sense immediately kicked in, and he quickly increased his efforts, "Unbelievably, this latest hot item is only... today!"

His words suddenly got stuck.

A pair of eyes saw Luffy behind Chopper and Usopp.

His mouth kept moving, sweating profusely in the end.

"Only... only..."

"What is it?" Luffy laughed.

Gudong!

Laisles swallowed his saliva and quickly came up with a plan.

[Shichibukai... Upon closer inspection, isn't that moss head next to it the pirate hunter with a bounty of 19 million?

Is this the Straw Hat Pirates' ship!?!]

Oh no!

"Of course it's free!" he announced loudly.

"That's great, you're such a good person!" Usopp exclaimed happily,

quickly grabbing the Slip-Slip Fruit and playing with Chopper.

Laisles breathed a sigh of relief, quickly bowed, and buried one foot into the submarine.

"Well, the gratitude has been delivered, and I still have..."

"Do you have any paper?"

Shock!

Laisles's escape action froze, and the forced smile on his face became even more bitter.

"My navigator likes to draw sea charts, and the paper consumption has been quite high lately. Give me some, the best quality."

Laisles was speechless, quickly pulling out a thick layer of paper from the warehouse.

Out of habit, he started to boast.

Luffy wasn't interested and took a quick look at the paper. The quality was indeed good, and he nodded in satisfaction.

"How much?"

[Shock x2!

He is willing to pay?

Would Shichibukai actually pay?

It's like a dream. These people who have the legal qualification to plunder would actually pay, that's ridiculous.

Maybe the paper isn't enough.]

He once again took out a new product, a high-quality kitchen knife.

Sanji's eyes lit up. "It's really a good kitchen knife. How much?"

[Shock x3!!

Still not enough!?

Damn it, spare me!]

Laisles cried as he took out the third item.

"Oh, I like this one. How much is it?"

No, stop it!

Take it, all of it!! Laisles threw out a large pile of goods from the warehouse, then jumped into the cabin and slammed the door shut.

Without looking back, he went into the sea.

"What's wrong with this guy?" Usopp said in astonishment. "He doesn't even take the money? Is the company going bankrupt?"

"Maybe he's in a hurry to remember that he has unfinished work and needs to deliver the goods, ," Zoro pondered and gave an answer.

"You idiot, what kind of answer is that,"But for you, with your moss head, thinking about needing to pee is already an above-average performance, so don't feel inferior."

"What did you say? You perverted chef!"

"Huh? Be careful, I'll cut you into eight pieces!"

"I'll kick you into a pile of minced meat!"

They started their usual quarrel.

Vivi laughed uncontrollably.

"It's because he's afraid of Mr. Luffy. If he encounters a Shichibukai at sea and gets robbed, no one will care."

"Oh, I see," Chopper clapped his right paw against his left paw, suddenly realizing. "Luffy, you are so scary... "

"That's scary, Luffy!" Usopp turned into a parrot.

Luffy said speechlessly, "I was going to pay, but he ran away on his own.

Without considering the merchant's price increase, it wouldn't have cost much. But since we got something for free, why not enjoy it together?"

Afterwards, Vivi met eight prisoners.

These prisoners, who were very clear about their own situation, knelt

down one after another to express their remorse and ask for forgiveness.

As for how sincere they were, that couldn't be investigated.

Seriously speaking, this group of people were just killers and agents who carried out orders, they were knives for killing, and it would be strange if they reflected on their actions.

The way these people act depends on their leader.

In the end, Vivi agreed to their request to join the group.

[Recruiting Crew Members.....]

8 people, a total of 1500 adventure coins, an average of 187.5 per person.

[Adventure Coins]: 5545 → 7045

Adventure coins are being spent more and more.

Luffy said to Bartolomeo, "Barto, you will be the vice captain of the second team, and you will lead these five male members."

"Yes, Luffy-sama, please leave it to me!"

"As for you three... Christmas, Valentine, and Golden Week, follow Vivi's orders. The daily cleaning of the Sunny will be entrusted to you."

"Yes, Luffy-sama."

The three women dared not disagree and expressed their submission.

If you really think about it, following Luffy is more promising than following Crocodile.

The background is different!

The background is very important when mixing in this vast sea!

Back to the Sunny.

When they left, there were two people, but now there are five.

As the lowest-ranking special agents, the three women started working, cleaning, and expressing their enthusiasm for work.

When they saw Robin not needing to work, sitting alone on a beach chair

on the deck, leisurely enjoying afternoon tea with a book, they couldn't help but envy.

Why is that?

We are all former members of criminal organizations!

Seemingly aware of their gaze, Robin looked up and smiled slightly.

"You've worked hard."

"Yes, Miss. Sunday!"

"Just call me by my name, there's no need to use that code name anymore."

"Understood, Robin-sama!"

At this moment, Nami walked out of the cabin.

Luffy handed her the paper that he obtained for free and said, "Here, you should need this."

"Thank you, Luffy~" Nami's eyes lit up, and she kissed him on the cheek.

This time, Vivi felt envious. It's so nice to be able to openly express affection to Mr. Luffy. She wouldn't dare to do that... at least not in front of Nami.

"Miss Nami, what are these papers for?" Vivi asked curiously.

"Of course, they're for drawing sea charts and making a complete world map. It's my dream!" Nami smiled and took her friend's hand.

I see, Mr. Luffy remembered Miss Nami's dream, so he asked for these papers...

Vivi secretly glanced at Luffy.

She also wanted to be loved!

"Are you interested?" Nami shared her joy. "Perfect, I'm planning to draw a sea chart of our journey from East Blue."

Vivi wasn't very interested in sea charts, but she was very interested in the adventures in East Blue.

"Really? Can you tell me about it?"

"Let's go, I'll take you to the drawing room."

The two women left together.

Luffy rubbed his chin, thinking about how to solve the problem between Vivi and Nami.

"And we have a new members now, so the number of people has increased. The Sunny can still accommodate everyone, but the Merry is getting crowded."

On the Sunny, the permanent female residents are Nami, Vivi, Robin, Kaya, Nojiko, and the three female agents, making a total of 8 people.

On the Merry, the crew members are Zoro, Usopp, Sanji, Bartolomeo, Yosaku, Johnny, and the five male agents, making a total of 11 people.

As for Captain Luffy, sometimes he stays on the Sunny and sleeps with Nami, and sometimes he goes to the Merry and sleeps with the men.

But now it's not possible anymore, the Merry is really too crowded.

"It seems like we need to buy a new ship. Should we wait until we reach Water 7?"

[You have sailed in the Sea of Paradise for 2 days, and you have been rewarded with 200 adventure coins.]

[Adventure Coins]: 7045→7245

"Luffy, we can already see the island!" Zoro, who was sleeping on the lookout tower of the Merry Go, shouted below.

Luffy sat on the figurehead of the Merry Go and squinted his eyes slightly at the words.

In the far distance of the field of vision, the traces of the island could be vaguely seen.

Suddenly, the sky darkened.

"What's wrong? What's wrong?" Usopp hurriedly ran out.

The next moment, a shadow enveloped the entire ship, and everyone on the deck was startled.

Luffy looked up.

A huge ship, extremely dilapidated and with a displacement dozens of times that of the Merry Go, descended from the sky.

Countless debris fell into the water first, causing waves to splash.

In an instant, everyone's expressions froze, and they looked up with their mouths wide open.

"A ship... fell from the sky!?" Sanji said incredulously.

"Luffy! Did you see that?" Usopp exclaimed.

"Luffy!" Chopper was frightened.

"Luffy-sama!" Bartolomeo widened his eyes.

Even the members of the Secret Agent Group had stunned expressions on their faces.

The only person who remained relatively calm was Zoro.

"Why would a ship fall from the sky?" he even pondered, "Is there a sea in the sky?"

"Are you an idiot? How can there be a sea in the sky!" Sanji shook his head repeatedly.

Boom!!

The huge ship fell into the water, causing massive waves to crash against the Merry Go's hull.

Luffy smiled and said,

"No, there really is. This time, Zoro won, Sanji."

"What?" Sanji was stunned.

"Not only is there a sea, but there are also many Sky Islands."

Luffy looked up at the sky, embarking on a journey that was unimaginable in his previous life.

"Our next destination is... the Island in the Sky!"

Chapter 77 Sniper From The

Blackbeard Pirates.

The ship that descended from the sky was a pirate ship.

It was not the same ship as in the original story.

Luffy remembered very clearly that the ship in the original story was an exploration ship from a certain country in the South Blue, while the ship they encountered this time had a pirate flag hanging on it.

After the large ship landed, the waves it caused made the Merry Go sway continuously.

At the same time...

The Thousand Sunny...

Nami and the others finally noticed the situation outside and went up to the deck one after another.

"What's going on? A ship fell from the sky?"

"Examining their flag, the ship appears to be of to the 'Celestial Pirates,'"

Robin remarked, crossing her arms and supporting her cheek with one hand. Her voice was soft and contemplative. "This crew was active roughly 18 years ago, led by Captain Surfing Board Serence, who had a substantial bounty of 480 million at that time."

"Robin, how do you know so much?" Vivi blinked her eyes, full of curiosity.

"Because... this pirate crew is from the West Blue, and I was their crewmate when I was a child."

Robin calmly talked about her past, "At some point, those people wanted to hand me over to the government, so I escaped. I think I was only 10 years old back then."

Vivi didn't know much about Robin's past, only that she was an orphan

from Ohara.

Luffy mentioned it before in Whisky Peak, it seemed like she had been hunted by the World Government for 20 years...

[How pitiful~]

Vivi suddenly sympathized with Robin. It was hard to imagine her past. Compared to her, Vivi's felt her experiences in the past two years were like nothing.

"Ah!"

Suddenly, Nami exclaimed.

"What's wrong, Nami?" Nojiko walked over to her sister.

"The Log Pose is broken!"

Nami looked at the pointer on her wrist, which now pointed to the sky.

"I had filled it with magnetism in Alabasta, why did it become like this?"

"It must have been captured by a stronger magnetic force and the magnetism has changed. If it points to the sky, it means there is a Sky Island above this sea area."

Robin looked up at the sky, but of course, she couldn't see any islands with her naked eye.

Moreover, the sky at this moment was relatively dim, as if a storm was about to come.

"Sky Island?"

Everyone's faces were full of astonishment.

Nami said in doubt, "Does Sky Island really exist? What if the Log Pose is broken..."

"Nami, when sailing in the Grand Line, anything can happen. As a navigator, you can doubt everything, but don't doubt the Log Pose."

Robin smiled slightly and said, "Although I have never seen Sky Island, this time we might have the chance to see it."

Sky Island? Vivi was filled with anticipation, thinking of the words Luffy had said to her before: Emerald City, Sky Island, Fishman Island...

Upon hearing this, Nami immediately nodded and shouted, "Luffy!"

The Merry Go.

Luffy heard Nami's call and turned his gaze towards her.

"What's wrong?"

Just as the words fell, Nami jumped over with Moonwalk, followed by Vivi.

"Robin said there is Sky Island up there. Is it true? "

"Yes, That's true." Luffy replied.

"So, are we going to Sky Island next? How do we get there?"

How to get there.

If it were just Luffy alone, he would have gone up there in fifth gear on the spot.

"By the Knock Up Stream," he explained. "When cold seawater flows into the large cavity at the bottom of the sea and the tremendous steam pressure generated by geothermal energy causes an explosion, this kind of current appears."

"Where is this Knock Up Stream?" Vivi asked.

"I don't know..."

Luffy gave her a blank look. He wasn't a god, how could he know everything?

[Don't treat me like Doraemon, hey!]

"Sky Island~! Sky Island~! Sky Island~!"

Usopp and Chopper, who were still shocked earlier, instantly changed their attitude.

"Quickly think of a way, Almighty Captain Luffy, we want to go play on Sky Island!" Usopp pleaded while pulling Chopper to dance.

(3) () ()

Luffy: ("...")

[Where did this Almighty suddenly come from? If you go to Sky Island, you'll have a hard time, Enel the God will give you free electric massage package, Usopp-kun]

While Luffy was muttering in his heart, suddenly...

"Hmm?"

Luffy focused his gaze and looked towards the distant sea.

Accompanied by the sound of drums and gongs, a huge pirate ship was approaching.

"What's going on this time?" Sanji lit a cigarette, and everyone gathered at the bow of the ship.

Soon, the pirate ship approached the landing point.

"Squeak~ Hey, are you guys here to salvage wreckage too?" A man who looked like an ape shouted loudly at the crowd.

Around him were numerous pirates.

"Ah, a wild ape."

"A wild Ape, huh."

"That's definitely a wild orangutan."

"No, maybe it's a wild monkey."

"Chopper, that guy is just like you, he must have ate the Human-Human Fruit, right?"

Zoro and the others each spoke a sentence.

The orangutan's ears twitched, as if he had heard a wonderful compliment, and he shyly smiled. (~)

"What, are you guys saying that I look like a monkey?" (~ ~)

The Ape sounded quite proud.

"Even if you say nice things, I can't let you have the wreckage! I am the

captain of the Masira Pirates, "Salvage King" Masira"

Usopp had a speechless expression on his face.

"No no no, we're not praising you! We're saying you look like an orangutan!"

"You really know how to talk, you little kid!" The orangutan touched his head, feeling a bit embarrassed. (๖~ ☹ ~)

Everyone: "....."

"Hahaha, Masira, are you guys from Gaya Island?" Luffy laughed and said, "Can you take us there?"

"Huh? Are you guys going to Gaya Island? That's where pirates gather."

The orangutan finally noticed the flags hanging on the Merry and Sunny.

"What the heck, you guys are pirates too."

After a pause, he nodded in agreement.

"After I salvage these... .."

As soon as he finished speaking, his expression gradually became fearful.

"What's wrong with this guy?"

Zoro squinted his eyes and followed the other's gaze.

In the far distance of their field of vision, a small island was moving towards them.

No, that wasn't an island... it was an incredibly huge creature!

"Luffy! What I saw just now... it's definitely not an island" Zoro said in shock, "What is that?!"

Turtle.

An incredibly huge turtle.

Luffy's Observation Haki captured the target's presence.

At this moment, a shadow suddenly appeared on the nearby water surface.

Boooooooooou~!

The shadow broke through the sea surface and let out a roar.

"~~~!!"

The bone-shaking sound made the members of the Straw Hat Pirates cover their ears.

When the crew turned their heads, they saw a gigantic whale, their faces turning pale with fear.

"What is this again!?" he murmured in shock.

"Laboon!" Sanji exclaimed, "Luffy, what is Laboon saying?"

Chopper, seeing Laboon for the first time, immediately entered the state of the Animal Pre-Translator.

"It says, go away! Don't come closer!"

"Is it warning that huge turtle?" Zoro looked surprised.

Luffy shook his head and reassured, "It's okay, don't worry, Laboon."

Laboon stopped roaring and turned its huge eyes towards Luffy, letting out a gentle call.

Chopper translated, "Captain Luffy, that thing is dangerous, it's hungry and wants to eat us."

After translating that, he was startled himself, "what! Does that big turtle want to eat us?"

While the crew was talking, the gigantic turtle had already approached within a hundred meters.

Its enormous body was even bigger than Laboon.

At this moment, the scene on the sea surface was incredibly eerie.

The smallest was the Merry Go.

Next was the Sunny Go, several times larger than the Merry Go.

After that was the Masira pirate ship, which was tens of times larger than the Thousand Sunny.

And even larger than this pirate ship was Laboon!

But that turtle was several times larger than Laboon.

The huge difference in size made everyone feel a chill.

"It seems like today is not suitable for salvage! Run!"

The Masira Pirates decisively abandoned the wreckage while shouting towards Luffy and the others, "Hey, if you want to go to Water 7, you'll have to catch up on your own. I won't wait for you."

He had just finished speaking when darkness fell.

The previously dim sky became even darker at this moment.

Shadows enveloped everyone's heads.

Nami was startled and mechanically turned around.

At a glance, her pupils suddenly contracted.

"Lu... Luffy!!"

One by one, everyone turned around, their faces becoming stiff.

Behind everyone were the silhouettes of three towering giants.

Those giants had a pair of small wings on their backs, and their height pierced through the sea and the sky.

Compared to them, the approaching turtle in the distance was as small and cute as an ant.

"Aaahh ah aaahh!"

Nami and Vivi hugged Luffy together and screaming in fear.

"It's just a shadow, a shadow of the people from Sky Island."

Luffy said helplessly, "Don't panic, hurry and catch up with that ship. As for that turtle..."

As he spoke, his gaze focused.

Boom!!

Terrifying Conqueror's Haki erupted from Luffy's body, and black and red lightning bolts were born in the air. They were like the tentacles of a demon, quickly spreading towards the turtle.

"Get lost!"

The strong will of the conqueror instantly made the turtle break out in a cold sweat. It immediately dove into the sea and escaped.

Not long after.

"Phew... So it was just a projection of the people from Sky Island. It really scared me."

After escaping from the dark area, Nami breathed a sigh of relief after listening to Luffy's explanation.

Vivi still held onto Luffy's arm, her face pale.

"If those giants really exist... It would be too terrifying."

Unimaginably huge.

If they truly exist, their height would probably be several thousand or tens of thousands of meters.

"Luffy, I can see the shadow of an island. It should be the Jaya Island you mentioned."

On the lookout tower, Zoro shouted, "The ship of that ape-man is about to enter the harbor."

"Got it, let's catch up...!!"

Suddenly, Luffy abruptly extended his hand and blocked Vivi in front of him.

His expression turned cold.

"What... what's wrong, Mr. Luffy?" Vivi was taken aback.

It was the first time she had seen such a murderous expression on Luffy's face.

"Damn it." Luffy released his clenched fist, and a bullet fell from his palm.

...Asking for trouble...

"What? A bullet?" Sanji's face was filled with shock. "Where did the sniper come from?"

"A sniper? That's impossible... Could it be from the island?" Usopp said dumbfoundedly. "Hey, hey, don't joke around. It's at least ten kilometers away, right? Luffy?"

He looked at Luffy, but saw Luffy staring in the direction of the island with a terrifying gaze.

Usopp swallowed his saliva.

"Is it true?!"

"What kind of sniper can shoot someone from ten kilometers away??"

"You guys move over slowly, I'll go settle the score with him first."

Luffy pulled his arm out of Vivi's embrace and immediately entered second gear.

Swoosh!

With a movement, he shot up like a missile and swiftly flew towards the direction of Jaya Island.

"Terrifying, terrifying, is this what a Shichibukai is like?"

Jaya Island, the top of a low building.

A man held a long spear, wearing a strange hat and a black cloak.

"Even without any preparation and without using Observation Haki, he can still react... He's simply a monster! Could it be advanced Observation Haki?"

The man whispered softly, then saw a figure swiftly flying towards him.

Immediately, his expression changed.

"He's angry?"

Without thinking too much, the man quickly put away his gun and leaped off the building.

Run!

What else is there to do if not run?

Wait for death?

Acting on impulse!

Shouldn't have tested this Shichibukai!

Believing that the other party is just a mere 71 million, thinking that their strength might be average, and going to snipe them with the idea that they might be able to take them down, is one thing.

The key is... it missed.

The bullet hit the woman next to him.

"My observation haki is really poor, to think that I would miss from this distance.

"No, maybe it was the influence of the wind. The wind is a bit noisy today.

"Nevertheless, let's get moving!" he exclaimed, making a swift exit.

Boom!!

The man sprinted away, his mind replaying his previous blunder.

Yet, after covering just a few hundred meters, a figure plummeted from the sky.

Upon landing in the street ahead, a dense cloud of smoke enveloped the scene.

Nearby pedestrians, or rather, nearby pirates, were all taken aback and turned their attention toward the smoke.

"What's going on? An explosion?"

"No, something fell!"

"A human?!"

Everyone stared in astonishment at the smoke.

The man with a straw hat hanging on his neck stood up straight expressionlessly, his gaze locked onto the opponent.

"Now that you've fired, you are prepared to die, right?"

Luffy calmly spoke, raising his fist and stepping towards the other party.

**!!

[That's a distance of ten kilometers!!

How did he.... A few seconds?]

Forty seconds? No, even shorter!

The man holding a long Gun showed an expression of disbelief.

"Wait... wait! I just fired a greeting shot, I didn't mean to be your enemy!"

Luffy ignored and continued to approach.

The man instinctively took a half step back and said again,

"Just one shot, with your strength, there's no way you could be hurt!"

Luffy's fist was wrapped in Conqueror's Haki.

A burst of black and red lightning erupted, and the terrifying power seemed to stir up a hurricane on the ground.

The man's face changed drastically, hastily retreating and shouting,

"My captain is very interested in you and wants to talk to you. I deliberately waited here for you, Seven Warlords of the Sea Monkey D.

Luffy!"

Seven Warlords of the Sea?

The surrounding pirates stared wide-eyed, their faces full of astonishment, fixated on the straw hat.

Indeed, he looks familiar. I saw him recently in the news!

Is this kid the new Shichibukai?

"Enough with your nonsense"

Luffy flashed forward, instantly approaching the man, his fist wrapped in Conqueror's Haki, fiercely striking down.

Boom!!!

In the instant before his fist made contact with the man's face, the terrifying power had already knocked him flat on the ground.

The man spat out blood with a "wow," his entire head flattened.

The next moment.

Boom!!

The huge explosion almost overturned half of the town.

The earth rolled up, and the frenzied black and red lightning roamed in the atmosphere, leaving no grass behind wherever it went.

Innocent onlookers were swept up and blown away by the leaked Conqueror's Haki.

For a moment, screams filled the air.

The terrifying power lasted for nearly half a minute.

When everything returned to calm and the smoke cleared.

Half of the small town had been leveled, with a huge crater formed within hundreds of meters from where Luffy stood.

And the person who had previously sniped at him now lay in the center of the huge pit like a dead dog.

No, it was a dead dog.

He was already dead.

"The sniper from the Blackbeard Pirates?"

Luffy lifted the body and casually said, "What was his name again?"

Ogre... Or something?"

I forgot.

Chapter 78 Aokiji And Blackbeard

Blackbeard Pirates, Captain Blackbeard, Marshall D. Teach.

This person is the target pursued by Ace.

On Whitebeard's ship, Blackbeard killed his comrades and stole a Devil

Fruit known as the "most evil in Devil Fruit history," the Dark Fruit,

before deserting the Whitebeard Pirates.

Afterward, he established his own Blackbeard Pirates.

The sniper who was killed is a member of Blackbeard's crew.

"Should I just kill Blackbeard here?"

Luffy threw the sniper's body aside and immediately observed the entire town with Observation Haki.

This small town on Jaya Island is called "Mock Town" and is a gathering place for pirates who are extravagant spenders.

The town itself is not very big, much smaller than Alabasta's capital.

His Observation Haki easily covered the entire town, but he didn't sense any particularly strong aura.

"He's not here?"

Luffy frowned slightly.

Even before eating the Dark Fruit, Blackbeard was able to injure Red-Haired Shanks. After eating the Dark Fruit, his strength must have increased significantly.

If someone like him were in this town, his Observation Haki would definitely be able to sense it.

"By the way, what did this person say just now?"

Luffy restrained his Observation Haki and once again looked at the body.

["My captain is very interested in you and wants to talk to you. I deliberately waited for you here."]

It seems that's what he said.

"Blackbeard left? Only leaving behind this sniper?"

Luffy surveyed his surroundings.

The town that he had destroyed with a punch was now in ruins, and the people who were caught up in the impact were sent flying.

He went a little overboard and ended up causing trouble with this sniper.

It was truly an accident that the town was destroyed.

At this moment, the Masira Pirates landed at the port.

After coming down from the ship, everyone saw that more than half of

Mock Town had turned into ruins, and each of them had a stunned expression.

"What happened with the explosion just now?!"

In the center of the ruins, the ape saw Luffy, along with the dead body marked with "Blood" that Luffy had thrown at his feet.

"It's you! Did you... do this?" the ape asked, his heart filled with shock.

His subordinates behind him stared at Luffy with fearful eyes.

At this moment, they realized that something was wrong.

"Boss, it's... it's the Shichibukai from the news"

"I knew they looked familiar. The pirate flag they're flying is the Straw Hat Pirates!"

As the island pointed to by Alabasta's magnetic field, the people of Jaya island naturally knew about the events happening nearby. Only those who didn't know about such big news must be the odd ones out.

"So you're a Shichibukai?" the ape swallowed nervously.

"You came at the right time, ape. I have something to ask you," Luffy said, temporarily putting aside the matter of Blackbeard. "I want to use the Knock Up Stream to reach Sky Island. There should be someone on this island who understands this current, right? Take me to meet him."

"You mean Captain Cricket...?" the ape said, showing a troubled expression, unable to hide his emotions.

The person in front of him was a Shichibukai, the person who had destroyed half of Mock Town. How could he bring him to meet their captain?

"Hahaha, don't be so scared. I'm actually a good person," Luffy laughed and explained, "It was this sniper who provoked me first and almost hurt my woman. It wouldn't be excessive for me to kill him, right?"

If he hadn't blocked that bullet just now, Vivi would have definitely been

injured.

She had only eaten two special fruits, and her physical strength hadn't reached the level of a superhuman.

Of course, the most crucial point was...

Her father had entrusted his daughter to him with peace of mind. If she got injured just two days after leaving, how could he explain it to his father-in-law.

"So it's like this..." the ape said, with a look of realization. "But you desire to reach Sky Island? In this day and age, few still hold faith in the existence of Sky Island."

In response, Luffy let out a soft, carefree laugh.

"The joy of life rests in encountering the unseen and relishing the unexperienced. Brother Ape, Sky Island may exist!"

Not mention he already knows Sky Island really exists, even if he didn't know, he will still go and confirm it with his own eyes.

The same words spoken by different people have different persuasiveness.

The monkey man's face was full of astonishment.

If a Shichibukai says that Sky Island exists and wants to go, then the probability of its existence greatly increases.

If the boss hears about it, he will definitely be very happy!

"I understand, I will take you to meet..."

The monkey man nodded blankly, and at this moment, footsteps sounded.

Looking back, they saw a man and a woman walking towards them.

The leader had golden short hair, wearing a pink T-shirt, white pants, and a pirate cloak draped over him.

He walked with his hands in his pockets, constantly looking around.

"How did this town become like this... Did you do it?"

The man finally looked at Luffy.

"I am Bellamy, captain of the Bellamy Pirates, with a bounty of 55 million berries. You are the Shichibukai mentioned in the news, Monkey D. Luffy! I have seen your face in the news!"

Luffy identified him at a glance.

Bellamy, just like Bartolomeo, is a fanatic worshipper, who worships Doflamingo, one of the Seven Warlords of the Sea.

In the original story, this guy beat up Luffy and Zoro, mocking that Sky Island doesn't exist.

"What's up?" Luffy smiled.

"I heard what you said just now. Does Sky Island really exist? Can you reach Sky Island by going through the Knock Up Stream?"

Luffy raised an eyebrow and asked, "Why does it matter to you whether it exists or not?"

"I don't believe Sky Island exists. The era of dreaming pirates has long passed!"

Saying that, Bellamy knelt down with a thud, shocking his subordinates behind him.

"Bellamy?!"

Even Luffy showed a surprised expression.

"What are you doing? I don't accept little brothers like you."

This scene seems to have happened in Logue Town before.

Where Bartolomeo suddenly ran up to him and begged to join.

"No... I don't want you to accept me as a little brother. I am currently under the flag of Doflamingo!"

"Straw Hat Luffy, you are a pirate who defeated a Shichibukai and took their position!"

"If someone like you says that Sky Island exists, then Sky Island might

really exist..."

Bellamy lowered his head and solemnly requested, "If you're going to Sky Island next, can you allow me to follow behind? I want to witness it with my own eyes!"

Upon hearing his words, his companions were stunned.

Is this Bellamy?

Luffy was also surprised that his words could make someone believe.

If this kid went to modern blue star, he would be easily fooled by those "authoritative" experts.

After a moment of thought, he said,

"There are generally three ways to get to Sky Island."

Three ways?!

Bellamy was shocked.

Then Luffy began to explain.

"The first is to reach it directly through the Knock Up Stream."

"The second is to go through the 'West Blue's Peak,' a path made up of island clouds."

"The third is for someone with abilities to fly up there."

With that, he turned and walked towards the port, and the last sentence reached Bellamy's ears.

"We're going to use the Knock Up Stream to go up next. We won't take you with us, and we won't wait for you. If you want to follow, prepare yourself."

It's impossible for someone to hitch a free ride. If Bellamy wants to go, he should take a boat himself.

However, after this incident, he had a slightly different view of this guy.

"Thank you very much!"

Bellamy shouted and then stood up.

"Bellamy?! Are you really going to do it?"

The person speaking, holding a woman in his arms, said with a puzzled expression on his face, "You'll die! Every once in a while, a ship falls from the sky. Haven't you seen it? The Knock Up Stream, this strange weather phenomenon, hasn't it already been explained?"

"Sarquiss."

Bellamy's gaze was incredibly calm. "I used to think that way too, but a Shichibukai has said it, Sky Island must really exist!"

Just like the Shichibukai Doflamingo whom he admired, the Straw Hat Luffy, also a Shichibukai, said that Sky Island exists.

If he doesn't confirm it with his own eyes, what does his past knowledge count for?

At this moment.

He was just like the ridiculed Luffy and Zoro in the original story.

Those two couldn't find a reason to fight.

And he couldn't bear the fact that his past knowledge was wrong!

"But, you'll really die... Once you fall, there's no doubt you'll die!"

Sarquiss opened his mouth, feeling parched.

"How can you be a pirate if you fear death?"

Bellamy raised his right hand high, clenched it into a fist, and grinned. "If you don't want to go, then stay at the resort and enjoy yourself for a few more days. If you want to go, come with me!"

At the same time.

Grand Line, a certain sea area.

A makeshift small boat made of four tree trunks bobbed up and down with the surging waves under the dim sky.

No, it couldn't even be called a boat, just a small raft that could easily fall apart in a storm.

On the raft, four people and a horse gathered together.

The horse was sickly, lying on the raft, and the person lying on its back looked like they only had a breath left, as if they could die at any moment.

"Captain."

The man speaking had bright red lipstick on, wore a black top hat, and was dressed like a theatrical character.

Lafitte, the navigator of the Blackbeard Pirates.

He held a white piece of paper in his hand, and at this moment, the paper was slowly burning. When the last corner turned to ashes and dissipated, Lafitte regretfully spoke up.

"Van Augur is dead. When the Life Card burns out, it means the owner is completely dead."

"Wiihahahahahaha... Dead, huh? It seems like it was a mistake to let him stay in Mock Town. Captain Teach, you should have let me stay instead"

The man with well-defined arm muscles burst into hearty laughter.

"Talk about a surprise!"

Captain Blackbeard devoured his peach pie, taking large bites, and washed it down with a swig of the most trashy and cheap rum.

Bang!

The bottle of alcohol was heavily smashed onto the wooden raft, shattering into pieces of glass on the spot.

"Zehahahahahaha, this is also the choice of fate. What a pity, Augur." He laughed loudly. "Dying silently in a place where the grand stage hasn't even opened yet. You must be unwilling too, right?"

"Who killed him?"

The muscular man, wearing a champion belt around his waist, expressed confusion over his companion's death...

"Do you even need to ask? With his strength, the only person in these waters who can kill him and prevent him from escaping must be Straw Hat Luffy!" Blackbeard grinned. "Zehahahahahaha... That guy must have been too overconfident. There's not a single pirate recognized by the government who is simple! If he couldn't understand this principle, there's nothing we can do even if he dies."

"Just letting him wait there for Straw Hat and conveying a few words, why did he end up dead?" The weak patient on the sickbed weakly spoke, with a hint of inexplicable mockery at the corner of his mouth.

"Who knows."

The others no longer paid attention.

Lafitte pondered and said, "The current problem is whether he actually conveyed the correct message or not."

It can't be that he was killed as soon as they met, right?

Just saying a few words and conveying the intentions of their Blackbeard Pirates should have been enough, right?

The Blackbeard Pirates were very interested in the newly appeared Shichibukai and even wanted to recruit them for cooperation.

"Hmm?"

Suddenly, Lafitte squinted his eyes and saw a person on the sea ahead, amidst the storm, riding a bicycle.

"Captain, look ahead."

"That guy is..." Blackbeard's expression froze, and he exclaimed, "Aokiji, Marine Admiral, why is he in a place like this?"

The expressions of everyone changed.

"Zehahahahahaha, riding a bicycle in this storm? What a monster."

It seemed that he also noticed the few people riding a small raft in the storm.

Aokiji raised his eyelids and greeted, "Oh, what a coincidence. Hey, you guys, have you seen the ship of Straw Hat Luffy? The new Shichibukai."

The Blackbeard Pirates replied, "They must be in the Mock town."

"Thanks."

Aokiji continued to ride his bike in the pouring rain. After a few steps, he blinked and turned around, saying, "Are you guys pirates too? Flying the pirate flag, huh? What's your bounty?"

"0!"

"Is that so?"

"Does the Marine Admiral have any interest in pirates with zero bounties?"

"Bounty doesn't mean anything. I can't just..."

Aokiji exhaled cold air, and the turbulent sea around him slowly froze.

The next moment, he was stunned confused.

Lafitte jumped up and tore down the pirate flag.

"It was a misunderstanding just now."

"Is that so?"

"Zehahahahahaha... yes!"

Although both sides said so, the pouring rain seemed to suddenly freeze at this moment, and the turbulent sea turned into a frozen landscape in an instant.

Mock Town.

The Sunny and Merry were about to dock, but they set sail again.

The two ships followed the Masira Pirates, hugging the coast.

"On the other side of Mouth Bay, is our base."

Led by the Masira Pirates, they quickly arrived at their destination.

On the sparsely populated coast, there was a luxurious mansion.

After everyone got ashore, they discovered that this house only had one

wall. The luxurious villa was fake, and behind the wall was just a small house.

"Does the person who knows about the Knock Up Stream live here?"

Nami got off the ship and looked at the compass on her wrist. The compass was still pointing towards the sky.

"Luffy, we should try to reach Sky Island before the magnetic field is refreshed. Otherwise, even if we manage to go up, we might lose our way."

The compass is currently being captured by the magnetic field of Sky Island. But if we stay on Jaya Island for too long, the magnetic field will be overwritten and start pointing towards the next island.

"So, we need to hurry as much as possible." Robin nodded.

In front of the small house, there was a wooden stake with a book placed on it.

Robin walked over and picked up the book to flip through it.

"The Great Deceiver Roland? A fairy tale from North Blue."

"North Blue?" Sanji caught onto the key information. "I read this book when I was a kid. I didn't expect to find it here."

"Huh? Sanji, you're from North Blue?" Usopp said in surprise.

"Didn't I mention it before? I was born in North Blue and grew up in East Blue."

"Huh!?! This is the first time I'm hearing about it."

The group chatted at the door.

Luffy followed the ape person towards the small house.

"Captain! Captain!"

The monkey person shouted as he pushed open the door. "There's a Shichibukai who wants to go to Sky Island!"

Inside the house, a man with a chestnut-shaped head was lying on a

small bed, looking unwell.

Upon hearing this, he forced himself to sit up and looked towards the door in astonishment.

"You are... Luffy of the Straw Hat Pirates?"

Luffy stepped into the room and immediately noticed the man's discomfort. He shouted outside, "Chopper, there's a patient here."

After saying that, he turned to the man on the bed and spoke, "I want to go to Sky Island. You must know about the Knock Up Stream. Can you tell me where and when it appears nearby?"

Chapter 79 Let's Go, Sky Island!

Mr.3: I Am The Man Who Wants

To Be The Leader Of The Straw

Hats!

Jaya Island, a small house by the coast.

After diagnosing the chestnut-headed uncle lying on the bed, Chopper's face turned serious as he said, "It's decompression sickness! And it's severe! How did it get this bad? If not for diving for years without proper measures, it shouldn't have reached this level!"

"Decompression sickness? What's that, Teacher Chopper?" Kaya asked curiously.

"Sometimes divers can get this illness, which is not usually very serious, but this uncle's case is quite special, as it has become a chronic disease," Chopper explained quickly.

"Simply put, when divers ascend from the seabed to the surface, due to insufficient decompression, a certain element that is dissolved in the blood cannot remain in that state and forms bubbles under such circumstances."

Afterwards, the bubbles expand inside and outside the blood vessels,

causing damage to blood flow or muscle joints.

"This uncle must have been diving continuously while the bubbles had not yet disappeared, diving again and again every day, accumulating over time, which is why it has become like this, at least for the past ten years!"

After listening to the professional doctor's explanation, the Straw Hat Crew was very surprised.

"Cough... "

On the sickbed, the chestnut-headed man coughed and smiled, saying, "Impressive medical skills, just a simple examination and you can see everything. I have indeed been diving for ten years."

"Hahaha, of course, it took me a lot of effort to find a ship doctor like this," Luffy grinned.

"Haaha."

The man laughed and sat up, waving his hand to indicate that Chopper need not worry.

"You can call me Cricket. Straw Hat Luffy, you said you're going to Sky Island?"

"That's right."

"Really impressive, there are still people in this era who believe in the existence of Sky Island. You're quite a fool too."

Ceicket laughed heartily and said, "Ape, bring the alcohol. How can we not entertain the guest when they have come this far."

"Yes, boss!"

The ape immediately went to get the alcohol.

Chopper hurriedly said, "Wait a minute, it's best for you not to drink alcohol, and also, don't smoke. Look at the cigarette butts on your table, decompression sickness might not be what takes your life, you might

already die with cancer ."

"Thank you, Doctor Chopper."

Cricket sat up and chuckled, saying, "I know my body best. This won't kill me, so don't worry."

Luffy fully agreed with this.

Compared to people in the previous world, the physical strength of people in this world is at a monster level.

"So, can you tell me where the Knock-Up Stream is now?" Luffy asked, sitting down on a chair brought by Bartolomeo without hesitation.

"I will tell you everything I know, and then the Saruyama Alliance Alliance will take you to the location of the Knock-Up Stream," Kuli Guy nodded, without any concealment, and explained it very kindly.

The Knock-Up Stream occurs frequently in the sea near the town of Mofu, five times a month, very regularly.

But the location is different each time.

"When was the most recent one?" Nami asked, "We need to get to Sky Island before the Log Pose resets, otherwise it will be troublesome."

"The magnetic force of this island only takes a day to fill up. You're a navigator, right? Don't worry, you have enough time," Cricket paused and continued, "When you arrived here, you must have encountered a sudden darkening of the sky, right?"

"Yes, it was like a cumulonimbus cloud, but not quite the same. It was my first time seeing such a gloomy day," Nami replied.

At this moment, the ape brought over some wine and poured a glass for Luffy.

Cricket picked up a bottle, took a few sips, and then said, "After encountering such a gloomy day, the Knock-Up Stream will definitely occur the next day, so you have a chance, but only one."

Hearing this, Nami breathed a sigh of relief, and everyone looked at Luffy, waiting for the captain's decision.

Luffy smiled and said, "Tomorrow? Where exactly?"

"Probably around 10 o'clock in the morning, and as for the direction... according to my experience, it's in the south of this island," Cricket replied.

Upon hearing this, Usopp eagerly said, "Then let's set off early, Luffy!"

"Hold on!" Cricket looked speechless, "you are rushing like this, do you even know where the direction of South is?"

"Oh right, because our target is not an island but a sea current, the Log Pose won't work," Nami punched Usopp hard and said, "Shut up, Usopp."

"Haha, there is a special bird called the 'Guide Bird' on this island. It is in the forest outside, and its head always points south. As long as you catch this bird, you will not lose your way."

Upon hearing this, the loyal subordinate Bartho immediately stood up and said, "Luffy-sama, leave it to me. Please rest assured, I will quickly catch this bird."

"Wait! Wait!" Cricket said helplessly. "Straw Hat Luffy, why are your subordinates so impatient?"

"Hahahahahahaha, indeed," Luffy laughed.

In the original story, members like Usopp, who are timid, are extremely afraid. But now, on his ship, they are becoming more and more proactive.

Shaking his head, Cricket explained to Bartholomeo, "The call of the Guide Bird is very unique. Once you hear it, you will immediately understand."

"Understood!" Bartholomeo immediately called his subordinates, "Second team, assemble! Let's go!"

He quickly left with his five agents.

"There is a bug-catching net at the entrance. Take it, it might be useful,"

Cricket instructed.

"Oh, thank you."

The group of people walked out of the cabin.

At this moment, Robin asked curiously, "Why are you so kind to tell us all this? Is it simply because Luffy is a Shichibukai?"

"No, actually I have my own selfish motives. My full name is Mont Blanc Cricket, I am a descendant of the great swindler Mont blanc Noland from 400 years ago..."

Cricket lit a cigarette and explained while smoking.

The Straw Hat crew listened attentively.

Luffy, of course, knew this story and was not interested in hearing it again. He immediately patted Vivi's shoulder, indicating her to follow him.

At the same time...

Luffy opened the adventure shop and started refreshing.

The small crisis earlier made him a little alert.

The further he goes in the Grand Line, the stronger enemies he will encounter.

Leaving aside the others for now, Vivi and Nami, he must quickly ensure that these two girls have enough power so that they won't encounter such a situation again.

Coincidentally, he also has a lot of adventure coins now. Anyway, let's start by refreshing four special fruits.

This time, he was very lucky. After only three refreshes, he saw a special gift box.

[Adventure Coins]: 8245 → 7105

Unfortunately, he didn't see the Haki fruit. His Observation Haki is still

stuck at level 4.

The two of them went outside.

Vivi whispered, "Mr. Luffy, is there something you want to tell me?"

"This is for you."

Luffy handed her the special fruit gift box. "This is my 60-year..."

"60 years of lifespan~!"

Vivi smiled brightly and happily accepted the gift box.

After opening it, she indeed saw six special fruits.

She knew that Nami was the first to master all six styles, while the other crew members only mastered one technique.

Now, she also received this gift.

Vivi was very moved. This showed that her position in Mr. Luffy's heart was the same as Miss Nami's.

She didn't care about the six styles, but she cares more about Mr. Luffy's intentions.

Without saying any formal thank you, she hugged Luffy with gratitude and boldly gave him a kiss.

In response, Luffy could only demonstrate and teach her what it means to exchange breaths.

Luffy looked down at the shy princess in his arms. He lowered his head and kissed Vivi's moist and warm tender flesh with his lips. Her lips were moist, greasy, with a mix taste of flower and fruit. Luffy opened his mouth activated his rubber lips, and smeared his saliva on the inside and outside of her lips, even her pretty chin was covered.

Not long after, Vivi's body gradually softened, her teeth opened slightly, and Luffy's long tongue took advantage of the gap, savagely invading Vivi's mouth.

Vivi With her feet, waist and head slightly raised, exposed her fragrant

tongue.

Luffy had already tasted Vivi's mouth several times. After experiencing it carefully again this time, he could appreciate the beauty of it even more.

In the very moist and warm mouth, a soft and smooth strip of tender meat was very welcoming.

Tongue kisses seemed to be able to express love and connect the soul.

The Pirate and The Princess kept kissing passionately, exchanging each other's saliva. The hot tongue conveyed Luffy's fondness for this little princess. After a long time, The Pirate and The Princess separated their lips reluctantly. Their heart full of heat.

"Princess Vivi, your mouth taste so sweet" Luffy teased as he looked into his Kidnapped princess's eyes.

"Um~ Luffy..." Vivi blushed and lowered her head, and slapped Luffy's chest with her soft fist.

Meanwhile, outside the door, on the wall, an eye and an ear quietly turned into pink petals and disappeared.

Inside the house.

Robin smiled lightly, pretending not to see or hear anything.

In the forest.

Bartolomeo, full of enthusiasm, walked at the front.

Daz Bonez, Gem, and Mr.9 followed on the left and right.

Bentham and Galdino were at the back.

"Why does this lady have to come and catch birds... One person is enough for this kind of thing," Bentham said with no enthusiasm, tiptoeing and doing ballet steps.

Glancing at him, Galdino snorted and said, "What an idiot."

"What are you saying, Mr.3!"

"Mr.2, I admit that your strength is indeed 'a little bit' stronger than mine,

but when it comes to intelligence, you are far inferior to me," Galdino pushed his glasses and revealed a wise look.

"It's been several days since you joined the Straw Hat Pirates, and you still haven't understood? In this pirate crew, what determines your position is not strength!"

"Huh? What are you talking about?"

"That long-nosed Usopp, his fighting ability is not even as good as a chicken raised for two and a half years, but do you think there is a big difference in his position compared to the first mate, Roronoa Zoro?"

Upon hearing this, Bentham couldn't help but reminisce.

It seemed that there really wasn't much difference.

These people quarreled and made noise every day, and it was impossible to tell who had a higher or lower position.

If you had to say, the scariest one was the woman named Nami.

"So what are you trying to say?"

"Haven't you understood yet? To integrate into this organization, what you need is not immense strength, but..."

At this point, Galdino pushed his glasses again, and the lenses reflected a bright light of wisdom.

"What is it?"

"It's pretending to be foolish!"

Galdino decisively said, "As long as I act more foolish and have fun with them every day, my position will eventually rise. I won't be limited to just being a member of the second team!"

Bentham: ("...")

"Hmph, it seems you don't understand, Mr.2! I, Mr.3, Galdino, am going to become the captain of the Straw Hat Pirates!"

Galdino revealed his ambition.

Unlike the dangerous missions he often had to carry out at Baroque Works, in the Straw Hat Pirates, as long as he pretends to be foolish and gets along with everyone, promotion and salary increase are not just dreams!

"Oh you are a fool, and this point, I have known already."

"Huh?"

Galdino said dissatisfiedly, "I haven't finished yet. To pretend to be foolish, one person is not enough. Haven't you noticed something more important?"

"What?"

"A partner! Understanding the importance of a partner! Look, Usopp and Chopper are a pair of partners, Zoro and Sanji are also a pair of partners, Johnny and Yosaku are also a pair of partners!"

Patting Bentham's shoulder, Galdino grinned and said,

"Join forces with me and climb up together, Mr.2!"

Bentham was a little moved. Although he didn't know why this fool wanted to find him, they were all companions who went from unemployment to reemployment. It was great to become partners again

"Mr.3!"

"Mr.2!"

The two looked at each other, suddenly feeling a sense of sympathy.

From the front came Bartolomeo's dissatisfied voice,

"Hey, hey, don't slack off, you two. Hurry up we must catch that bird before tomorrow!"

"Eh?"

"Vice Captain Barto!"

"Ah?! You cannot call me Barto? I'm just a little brother who ranks three.

Barto is a title exclusive for Luffy-sama. Just call me Vice Captain!"

"Yes, Vice Captain"

Evening.

Bartolomeo and his team returned, not only capturing the guide bird, but also catching many strange things.

"Luffy-sama, this is the King of South Birds"

He ran over, as if inviting praise, and said, "I caught a hundred of them.

After a rigorous selection process, it stood out and became the 'king'!

Only such a King South Bird is worthy of your status as Luffy-sama, the Almighty"

Who wants this thing?!

Luffy's mouth twitched, seeing Mr. 3 next to him with a swollen face.

"What happened to him?"

"He might have tripped."

[Looks like he got beaten up.]

Luffy waved his hand.

"Give it to Usopp, he'll definitely like it."

After a pause, he called Chopper over to treat Mr. 3's injuries.

At this moment, Cricket walked over, confirmed the guide bird, and nodded.

"Now, do we need the final preparations?"

"What else?" Nami blinked her eyes.

"Reinforce the ship! Your Sunny is sturdy, a very powerful ship, but the other Merry... to be honest, I don't know if it can withstand it."

The power of the Knock Up Stream is immense, it can push the ship up to a height of 7,000 meters in an instant.

Ordinary ships would disintegrate in the moment of impact.

Although Luffy can use his fruit abilities to Rubberize the ships, but he has to be in touch with the ships, which is indeed a problem. It's better to

take more measures.

Luffy nodded and immediately called the male crew members to start reinforcing the Merry's hull.

Amidst everyone's busyness, two pirate crews arrived one after another.

The first one is the Masira Pirates, led by Captain Masira. They, along with the Shoujou Pirates, are collectively known as the Saruyama Alliance and are fans and subordinates of Cricket.

With their joining, the work became smoother.

Next to arrive is the Bellamy Pirates led by Bellamy. Of course, they are not here to steal gold, but to wait for departure and go to Sky Island together with the others.

Luffy doesn't really care, let them just follow along, anyways he is not responsible for anything.

Seeing everyone reinforcing the Merry Go, Bellamy also had his subordinates help.

It continued until the early hours of the next day, around four or five o'clock. When the female crew members, who had slept soundly, woke up, everyone finally finished reinforcing the Merry Go.

At this point, the original Going Merry has been completely transformed.

It now has many iron plates and is equipped with a pair of wings.

Especially the most critical part of a ship, the keel, has undergone extensive construction at the bottom of the ship, regardless of cost, to ensure that it does not disintegrate in the Knock-Up Stream.

"That should do it."

Cricket stood on the shore, looking at the early morning sunlight, and smiled, "Straw Hat Luffy, I wish you a smooth journey."

"Thank you, Mont Blanc Cricket."

Luffy stood on the deck of the Merry Go, grinning, "Your ancestors were

not liars. The Sky Island above our heads is real, as well as the Golden City. Just wait, you'll know soon enough!"

Cricket stood still in place, watching the ship gradually move away from the shore.

The fleet, consisting of five pirate ships, sailed towards the area where the Knock-Up Stream is located.

They are respectively:

The Thousand Sunny, commanded by Nami!

The Going Merry, with Luffy at the helm!

The New Witch's Tongue, led by Bellamy!

The Victory Hunter, belonging to the Masira Pirates!

The Uton Sonar, belonging to the Shoujou Pirates!

"Set sail, heading for Sky Island!"

Chapter 80 Luffy vs Aokiji, Rush

To The Top Of The White Clouds!

The fleet sailed towards the south of Jaya Island and entered the target area after several hours of navigation.

"Wow!! Look, Luffy, what is that?" Usopp exclaimed loudly, holding a telescope.

In the distance, there

Jaya Island, a small house by the coast.

After diagnosing the chestnut-headed uncle lying on the bed, Chopper's face turned serious as he said, "It's decompression sickness! And it's severe! How did it get this bad? If not for diving for years without proper measures, it shouldn't have reached this level!"

"Decompression sickness? What's that, Teacher Chopper?" Kaya asked curiously.

"Sometimes divers can get this illness, which is not usually very serious,

but this uncle's case is quite special, as it has become a chronic disease," Chopper explained quickly.

"Simply put, when divers ascend from the seabed to the surface, due to insufficient decompression, a certain element that is dissolved in the blood cannot remain in that state and forms bubbles under such circumstances."

Afterwards, the bubbles expand inside and outside the blood vessels, causing damage to blood flow or muscle joints.

"This uncle must have been diving continuously while the bubbles had not yet disappeared, diving again and again every day, accumulating over time, which is why it has become like this, at least for the past ten years!"

After listening to the professional doctor's explanation, the Straw Hat Crew was very surprised.

"Cough... "

On the sickbed, the chestnut-headed man coughed and smiled, saying, "Impressive medical skills, just a simple examination and you can see everything. I have indeed been diving for ten years."

"Hahaha, of course, it took me a lot of effort to find a ship doctor like this," Luffy grinned.

"Haaha."

The man laughed and sat up, waving his hand to indicate that Chopper need not worry.

"You can call me Cricket. Straw Hat Luffy, you said you're going to Sky Island?"

"That's right."

"Really impressive, there are still people in this era who believe in the existence of Sky Island. You're quite a fool too."

Ceicket laughed heartily and said, "Ape, bring the alcohol. How can we not entertain the guest when they have come this far."

"Yes, boss!"

The ape immediately went to get the alcohol.

Chopper hurriedly said, "Wait a minute, it's best for you not to drink alcohol, and also, don't smoke. Look at the cigarette butts on your table, decompression sickness might not be what takes your life, you might already die with cancer ."

"Thank you, Doctor Chopper."

Cricket sat up and chuckled, saying, "I know my body best. This won't kill me, so don't worry."

Luffy fully agreed with this.

Compared to people in the previous world, the physical strength of people in this world is at a monster level.

"So, can you tell me where the Knock-Up Stream is now?" Luffy asked, sitting down on a chair brought by Bartolomeo without hesitation.

"I will tell you everything I know, and then the Saruyama Alliance Alliance will take you to the location of the Knock-Up Stream," Kuli Guy nodded, without any concealment, and explained it very kindly.

The Knock-Up Stream occurs frequently in the sea near the town of Mofu, five times a month, very regularly.

But the location is different each time.

"When was the most recent one?" Nami asked, "We need to get to Sky Island before the Log Pose resets, otherwise it will be troublesome."

"The magnetic force of this island only takes a day to fill up. You're a navigator, right? Don't worry, you have enough time," Cricket paused and continued, "When you arrived here, you must have encountered a sudden darkening of the sky, right?"

"Yes, it was like a cumulonimbus cloud, but not quite the same. It was my first time seeing such a gloomy day," Nami replied.

At this moment, the ape brought over some wine and poured a glass for Luffy.

Cricket picked up a bottle, took a few sips, and then said, "After encountering such a gloomy day, the Knock-Up Stream will definitely occur the next day, so you have a chance, but only one."

Hearing this, Nami breathed a sigh of relief, and everyone looked at Luffy, waiting for the captain's decision.

Luffy smiled and said, "Tomorrow? Where exactly?"

"Probably around 10 o'clock in the morning, and as for the direction... according to my experience, it's in the south of this island," Cricket replied.

Upon hearing this, Usopp eagerly said, "Then let's set off early, Luffy!"

"Hold on!" Cricket looked speechless, "you are rushing like this, do you even know where the direction of South is?"

"Oh right, because our target is not an island but a sea current, the Log Pose won't work," Nami punched Usopp hard and said, "Shut up, Usopp."

"Haha, there is a special bird called the 'Guide Bird' on this island. It is in the forest outside, and its head always points south. As long as you catch this bird, you will not lose your way."

Upon hearing this, the loyal subordinate Bartho immediately stood up and said, "Luffy-sama, leave it to me. Please rest assured, I will quickly catch this bird."

"Wait! Wait!" Cricket said helplessly. "Straw Hat Luffy, why are your subordinates so impatient?"

"Hahahahahahaha, indeed," Luffy laughed.

In the original story, members like Usopp, who are timid, are extremely

afraid. But now, on his ship, they are becoming more and more proactive.

Shaking his head, Cricket explained to Bartholomeo, "The call of the South Bird is very unique. Once you hear it, you will immediately understand."

"Understood!" Bartholomeo immediately called his subordinates, "Second team, assemble! Let's go!"

He quickly left with his five agents.

"There is a bug-catching net at the entrance. Take it, it might be useful," Cricket instructed.

"Oh, thank you."

The group of people walked out of the cabin.

At this moment, Robin asked curiously, "Why are you so kind to tell us all this? Is it simply because Luffy is a Shichibukai?"

"No, actually I have my own selfish motives. My full name is Mont Blanc Cricket, I am a descendant of the great swindler Mont blanc Noland from 400 years ago..."

Cricket lit a cigarette and explained while smoking.

The Straw Hat crew listened attentively.

Luffy, of course, knew this story and was not interested in hearing it again. He immediately patted Vivi's shoulder, indicating her to follow him.

At the same time...

Luffy opened the adventure shop and started refreshing.

The small crisis earlier made him a little alert.

The further he goes in the Grand Line, the stronger enemies he will encounter.

Leaving aside the others for now, Vivi and Nami, he must quickly ensure that these two girls have enough power so that they won't encounter such

a situation again.

Coincidentally, he also has a lot of adventure coins now. Anyway, let's start by refreshing four special fruits.

This time, he was very lucky. After only three refreshes, he saw a special gift box.

[Adventure Coins]: 8245 → 7105

Unfortunately, he didn't see the Haki fruit. His Observation Haki is still stuck at level 4.

The two of them went outside.

Vivi whispered, "Mr. Luffy, is there something you want to tell me?"

"This is for you."

Luffy handed her the special fruit gift box. "This is my 60-year..."

"60 years of lifespan~!"

Vivi smiled brightly and happily accepted the gift box.

After opening it, she indeed saw six special fruits.

She knew that Nami was the first to master all six styles, while the other crew members only mastered one technique.

Now, she also received this gift.

Vivi was very moved. This showed that her position in Mr. Luffy's heart was the same as Miss Nami's.

She didn't care about the six styles, but she cares more about Mr. Luffy's intentions.

Without saying any formal thank you, she hugged Luffy with gratitude and boldly gave him a kiss.

In response, Luffy could only demonstrate and teach her what it means to exchange breaths.

Luffy looked down at the shy princess in his arms. He lowered his head and kissed Vivi's moist and warm tender flesh with his lips. Her lips were

moist, greasy, with a mix taste of flower and fruit. Luffy opened his mouth activated his rubber lips, and smeared his saliva on the inside and outside of her lips, even her pretty chin was covered.

Not long after, Vivi's body gradually softened, her teeth opened slightly, and Luffy's long tongue took advantage of the gap, savagely invading Vivi's mouth.

Vivi With her feet, waist and head slightly raised, exposed her fragrant tongue.

Luffy had already tasted Vivi's mouth several times. After experiencing it carefully again this time, he could appreciate the beauty of it even more.

In the very moist and warm mouth, a soft and smooth strip of tender meat was very welcoming.

Tongue kisses seemed to be able to express love and connect the soul.

The Pirate and The Princess kept kissing passionately, exchanging each other's saliva. The hot tongue conveyed Luffy's fondness for this little princess. After a long time, The Pirate and The Princess separated their lips reluctantly. Their heart full of heat.

"Princess Vivi, your mouth taste so sweet" Luffy teased as he looked into his Kidnapped princess's eyes.

"Um~ Luffy..." Vivi blushed and lowered her head, and slapped Luffy's chest with her soft fist.

Meanwhile, outside the door, on the wall, an eye and an ear quietly turned into pink petals and disappeared.

Inside the house.

Robin smiled lightly, pretending not to see or hear anything.

In the forest.

Bartolomeo, full of enthusiasm, walked at the front.

Daz Bonez, Gem, and Mr.9 followed on the left and right.

Bentham and Galdino were at the back.

"Why does this lady have to come and catch birds... One person is enough for this kind of thing," Bentham said with no enthusiasm, tiptoeing and doing ballet steps.

Glancing at him, Galdino snorted and said, "What an idiot."

"What are you saying, Mr.3!"

"Mr.2, I admit that your strength is indeed 'a little bit' stronger than mine, but when it comes to intelligence, you are far inferior to me," Galdino pushed his glasses and revealed a wise look.

"It's been several days since you joined the Straw Hat Pirates, and you still haven't understood? In this pirate crew, what determines your position is not strength!"

"Huh? What are you talking about?"

"That long-nosed Usopp, his fighting ability is not even as good as a chicken raised for two and a half years, but do you think there is a big difference in his position compared to the first mate, Roronoa Zoro?"

Upon hearing this, Bentham couldn't help but reminisce.

It seemed that there really wasn't much difference.

These people quarreled and made noise every day, and it was impossible to tell who had a higher or lower position.

If you had to say, the scariest one was the woman named Nami.

"So what are you trying to say?"

"Haven't you understood yet? To integrate into this organization, what you need is not immense strength, but..."

At this point, Galdino pushed his glasses again, and the lenses reflected a bright light of wisdom.

"What is it?"

"It's pretending to be foolish!"

Galdino decisively said, "As long as I act more foolish and have fun with them every day, my position will eventually rise. I won't be limited to just being a member of the second team!"

Bentham: ("...")

"Hmph, it seems you don't understand, Mr.2! I, Mr.3, Galdino, am going to become the captain of the Straw Hat Pirates!"

Galdino revealed his ambition.

Unlike the dangerous missions he often had to carry out at Baroque Works, in the Straw Hat Pirates, as long as he pretends to be foolish and gets along with everyone, promotion and salary increase are not just dreams!

"Oh you are a fool, and this point, I have known already."

"Huh?"

Galdino said dissatisfiedly, "I haven't finished yet. To pretend to be foolish, one person is not enough. Haven't you noticed something more important?"

"What?"

"A partner! Understanding the importance of a partner! Look, Usopp and Chopper are a pair of partners, Zoro and Sanji are also a pair of partners, Johnny and Yosaku are also a pair of partners!"

Patting Bentham's shoulder, Galdino grinned and said,

"Join forces with me and climb up together, Mr.2!"

Bentham was a little moved. Although he didn't know why this fool wanted to find him, they were all companions who went from unemployment to reemployment. It was great to become partners again

"Mr.3!"

"Mr.2!"

The two looked at each other, suddenly feeling a sense of sympathy.

From the front came Bartolomeo's dissatisfied voice,

"Hey, hey, don't slack off, you two. Hurry up we must catch that bird before tomorrow!"

"Eh?"

"Vice Captain Barto!"

"Ah?! You cannot call me Barto? I'm just a little brother who ranks three.

Barto is a title exclusive for Luffy-sama. Just call me Vice Captain!"

"Yes, Vice Captain"

Evening.

Bartolomeo and his team returned, not only capturing the guide bird, but also catching many strange things.

"Luffy-sama, this is the King of South Birds"

He ran over, as if inviting praise, and said, "I caught a hundred of them.

After a rigorous selection process, it stood out and became the 'king'!

Only such a King South Bird is worthy of your status as Luffy-sama, the Almighty"

Who wants this thing?!"

Luffy's mouth twitched, seeing Mr. 3 next to him with a swollen face.

"What happened to him?"

"He might have tripped."

[Looks like he got beaten up.]

Luffy waved his hand.

"Give it to Usopp, he'll definitely like it."

After a pause, he called Chopper over to treat Mr. 3's injuries.

At this moment, Cricket walked over, confirmed the guide bird, and nodded.

"Now, do we need the final preparations?"

"What else?" Nami blinked her eyes.

"Reinforce the ship! Your Sunny is sturdy, a very powerful ship, but the other Merry... to be honest, I don't know if it can withstand it."

The power of the Knock Up Stream is immense, it can push the ship up to a height of 7,000 meters in an instant.

Ordinary ships would disintegrate in the moment of impact.

Although Luffy can use his fruit abilities to Rubberize the ships, but he has to be in touch with the ships, which is indeed a problem. It's better to take more measures.

Luffy nodded and immediately called the male crew members to start reinforcing the Merry's hull.

Amidst everyone's busyness, two pirate crews arrived one after another.

The first one is the Masira Pirates, led by Captain Masira. They, along with the Shoujou Pirates, are collectively known as the Saruyama Alliance and are fans and subordinates of Cricket.

With their joining, the work became smoother.

Next to arrive is the Bellamy Pirates led by Bellamy. Of course, they are not here to steal gold, but to wait for departure and go to Sky Island together with the others.

Luffy doesn't really care, let them just follow along, anyways he is not responsible for anything.

Seeing everyone reinforcing the Merry Go, Bellamy also had his subordinates help.

It continued until the early hours of the next day, around four or five o'clock. When the female crew members, who had slept soundly, woke up, everyone finally finished reinforcing the Merry Go.

At this point, the original Going Merry has been completely transformed.

It now has many iron plates and is equipped with a pair of wings.

Especially the most critical part of a ship, the keel, has undergone

extensive construction at the bottom of the ship, regardless of cost, to ensure that it does not disintegrate in the Knock-Up Stream.

"That should do it."

Cricket stood on the shore, looking at the early morning sunlight, and smiled, "Straw Hat Luffy, I wish you a smooth journey."

"Thank you, Mont Blanc Cricket."

Luffy stood on the deck of the Merry Go, grinning, "Your ancestors were not liars. The Sky Island above our heads is real, as well as the Golden City. Just wait, you'll know soon enough!"

Cricket stood still in place, watching the ship gradually move away from the shore.

The fleet, consisting of five pirate ships, sailed towards the area where the Knock-Up Stream is located.

They are respectively:

The Thousand Sunny, commanded by Nami!

The Going Merry, with Luffy at the helm!

The New Witch's Tongue, led by Bellamy!

The Victory Hunter, belonging to the Masira Pirates!

The Uton Sonar, belonging to the Shoujou Pirates!

"Set sail, heading for Sky Island!"

an incredibly massive cumulonimbus cloud that almost covered half of the sky.

In the center of the cloud layer, there was a pitch-black thundercloud that concaved upwards, forming a terrifying and mysterious hole.

"That's probably it," Johnny said excitedly.

"Yeah, it must be it. Will the Knock-Up Stream be below that cloud?"

Yosaku looked into the distance and took a sharp breath.

When faced with something enormous, humans couldn't help but feel a

sense of insignificance.

Shouts came from the Masira Pirates ship.

"Mr. Luffy, the appearance of the cumulonimbus cloud is earlier than expected. We will expedite the exploration of the specific location of the sea current. Your three ships should head towards that direction first!"

Luffy made an OK gesture and immediately ordered everyone to turn the helm towards the center of the cumulonimbus cloud.

On the other side, Nami on the Thousand Sunny immediately ordered two of the three female agents to steer the ship's bow.

Why two females... because Miss Goldenweek was a little girl, and in a group of adult women, little girls would always receive some preferential treatment.

The Going Merry.

Bellamy took a deep breath and shouted to his subordinates, "Follow them!"

"Okay!"

There were many crew members who chose to follow. Even Sarquiss, who had previously advised against Bellamy, followed suit.

"I must be crazy, Bellamy. We're all crazy!" He nervously lit a cigarette and anxiously took a puff.

"If you don't want to go, there's still a choice. You can return on the ship of the Alliance," Bellamy stared at the vast cumulonimbus cloud, grinning. "No matter what you say, I won't change my mind, Sarquiss!"

"You idiot! I'm the vice-captain. If I don't follow, everyone will give up like me!" Sarquiss threw the cigarette he had only taken one puff of onto the deck and stomped on it fiercely. "Now we can only believe in that Shichibukai's words! Ahhh, how much better it is to sleep with women in a hotel!"

"Haha, remember the initial feeling of choosing to set sail!" Bellamy clenched his fist, suppressing the restlessness in his heart. "From North Blue all the way here, the comfortable life in Mock Town made us forget about the sea! I've made up my mind, Sarquiss. If Sky Island really exists, I will choose to embark on an adventure once again!"

"Bellamy....."

Sarquiss paused for a moment, then sneered, "Only if we can survive, you idiot!"

Three pirate ships formed a single-file line and entered the range of the whirlpool.

The sky immediately became extremely dark, and if one looked up, they could see the deep hole above their heads, as if it could suck away one's soul.

Below the hole in the deep cloud layer, the seawater was swirling, getting faster and faster, gradually forming a massive whirlpool.

All three ships were carried by the swirling current, slowly heading towards the center of the whirlpool.

"Is this the place?" Nami shouted loudly.

A reply came from the Masira Pirates reconnaissance ship.

"Yes, Miss Nami. It is estimated that in another fifteen minutes, the Knock Up Stream will erupt, and you will enter the interior of the whirlpool!"

The interior?

Nami looked at the terrifying whirlpool and felt a chill.

The Sunny circled around the whirlpool, getting closer to the center with each revolution.

And at the center of the whirlpool was a bottomless darkness.

"Will we be swallowed by the darkness if we fall down? There might be some terrifying monster waiting for us with its mouth wide open," Robin

said calmly.

Vivi and Nami were frightened.

"Ah, please stop, Miss Robin!"

"Shut up, Robin!"

Mikita controlled the helm, but now she was caught in the current and couldn't control it anymore.

She could only watch helplessly as the ship slid towards the center of the whirlpool, sweat streaming down her forehead, and forced a dry laugh, saying, "Kyahahaha.... luckily, I have the Weight-Weight Fruit ability. If worse comes to shove, I can fly."

Beside her, someone crossed their arms and said, "Are you an idiot? If something happens to them, do you think Captain Luffy will spare us?"

Mikita: (:□□□)

"Don't say anything, damn it, why do you always like to scare people!!"

Suddenly, the ship broke free from the whirlpool and, due to the steepness, fell directly towards the dark center.

In an instant, except for Robin, all the women screamed, making a collective "aaahhh" sound.

Immediately after, the Merry Go also followed suit and fell.

Compared to the women, the men were naturally calmer, except for Usopp and Chopper, the timid members.

They were screaming, even louder than Nami and the others.

"hahahahahaha."

Luffy couldn't help but laugh and turned to look at Bellamy's ship.

His ship was much larger than the Sunny, and it was also falling along with them.

Boom!!

The three ships fell into the darkness one after another, amidst screams,

finally hitting the bottom.

Only then did everyone realize that while they were falling, the whirlpool had gradually subsided.

At this moment, the sea surface was extremely calm, as if it were the eve of a storm.

"Luffy!" Nami shouted, "We probably have about five minutes, so be prepared!"

"Got it... Huh?"

Luffy responded and suddenly frowned.

He jumped down from the bow of the ship and looked towards the southwest.

In his Observation Haki perception, a powerful aura was approaching.

"What's wrong, Luffy?" Zoro noticed his expression and asked in a deep voice.

"It's a Marine Admiral, Zoro."

Luffy squinted his eyes slightly and walked to the edge of the ship to look.

On the calm and unruffled sea surface, a tall man in a suit was riding a bicycle towards them.

"Marine Admiral!?"

Everyone was shocked.

Sanji calmly said, "What are you panicking about? We are the pirate crew under the Shichibukai, in a sense we are colleagues of the Marines..., I suppose?"

"We are all organizations under the World Government, so you could say that, reluctantly."

At this moment, Aokiji rode his bike with one hand and raised his right arm to wave at everyone. "According to the route, you guys would indeed

be in a place like this. Monkey D. Luffy! Are you going to Sky Island?"

"Are you planning to go there, Aokiji? What's the matter?"

Luffy could probably guess what this guy was here for.

"I can't allow that, I also have a mission."

Aokiji scratched his head and immediately stopped the pedals.

In the next moment, the sea rapidly froze under the wheels of the bicycle, instantly freezing the sea area within a radius of several kilometers.

Three pirate ships were all fixed on the surface of the sea.

"What, what?" Nami said in surprise, "Luffy, what's happening?"

"Nothing, nothing happened."

While saying that, Luffy lightly jumped off the Merry Go and walked towards Aokiji, slowly saying, "You guys go up first, I'll come over later."

New Witch's Tongue.

Sarquiss said in shock, "What's going on? The Marine Admiral actually appeared? You saw it too, Bellamy!"

Bellamy had the same astonished expression.

From the scene, it seemed like the Shichibukai and the Marine Admiral were going to fight. Why? They should be on the same side, right?

The Merry Go.

Zoro's face looked grim as he said in a deep voice, "Usopp, Sanji, Johnny,

Yosaku, Bartolomeo, secure the ship, the Knock Up Stream is coming!"

His Observation Haki had already heard the sound from the bottom of the sea.

"As for here, leave it to Luffy!"

The Sunny.

Robin covered her mouth, her pupils shrinking suddenly.

...!

"He must be here to capture me!!"

□ (●_●)

"Shut up, Robin!" Nami's face turned serious as she clenched her fist and whispered, "We have to believe in Luffy! If we can't even trust Luffy, then who can we trust?"

Robin couldn't say anything in response.

Will these people protect her in front of the Admiral?

Vivi held her hand and gently reassured her, "Don't be afraid, Robin.

Aren't we comrades? We have to believe in Mr. Luffy!"

On the icy surface.

Luffy's Haki continued to rise, he raised his right hand, moved his fingers, and made a cracking sound.

"I don't care what your mission is, I have some free time, so let's have a little fight."

Aokiji stood next to his bicycle, silently rubbing his head.

Full of youthful energy... truly worthy of Garp's grandson!

Does he even know why I'm here?

"Monkey D. Luffy, I have also received many favors from your grandfather in the past. Now that you are a Shichibukai, do you seriously want to fight me?"

After a pause, he continued, "I'm just here to take away a woman, her name is Ni...!"

Boom!!

Suddenly, a tremendous force emerged from the sea.

The frozen sea surface created by Aokiji was instantly shattered, and the sea rose, lifting a pirate ship.

Immediately after, a loud rumbling sound echoed.

The terrifying impact lifted the three ships into the sky.

"Arara..." Aokiji looked up, casually laughing, "If you want to go to Sky

Island, there's a safer route. The death rate of the Knock Up Stream is 99%. Your companions might fall down."

"No, I have an excellent navigator."

Luffy grinned, "Are you here to take Robin away? Give up, with me here, you won't get anything."

"So you knew." Aokiji wasn't surprised.

["Without her, how could I decipher the historical texts on the four road poneglyphs?"]

"This is an order from the government."

"The government means nothing."

Aokiji couldn't help but laugh, rubbing his forehead and saying, "I really can't do anything about you guys. Since that's the case, I'll have to use force to bring you back!"

In his words, he swung his palm towards Luffy.

Endless cold air emanated from his palm, as if it wanted to freeze even the atmosphere.

"Ice Time!"

The cold air rapidly spread, almost instantaneously freezing Luffy into a statue.

However, in the next second...

Crack, crack, crack!

Fine cracks appeared on the surface of the ice, and with a bang, the ice shattered into sparkling fragments.

"Shave!"

Luffy sprang into action, instantly shifting into second gear and rapidly closing the gap with Aokiji.

"Close combat?" Aokiji smirked, thinking, "Does this kid really think an Admiral's close combat skills are weak? But... what kind of ability is

this?"

Steam billowed from Luffy's body, baffling Aokiji as he struggled to understand the nature of this peculiar Devil Fruit ability.

Luffy unleashed a powerful kick.

Surrounded by Armament Haki and Conqueror's Haki, his attack was fierce and packed with destructive force.

Utilizing Observation Haki to pinpoint Aokiji's movements, Luffy predicted his adversary's next defensive maneuver.

In the blink of an eye, Conqueror's Haki burst forth, and Luffy's kick held nothing back.

Aokiji's face froze with shock.

He raised his right leg to block the incoming strike, but even before contact was made, the force of Conqueror's Haki hit home.

Bang!!

An immense explosion rang out as Aokiji was forcefully expelled in his elemental form.

His body transformed into an ice sculpture, and he hurtled across the surface like a streak of white light, covering hundreds, if not thousands of kilometers in an instant.

"How is this possible...! Conqueror's entanglement!?"

The terrifying impact was too much for Aokiji to maintain his stable form. In the midst of being kicked away, his body made of ice shattered into countless pieces.

From a distance, this scene looked as if Luffy's kick had turned Aokiji into a sky full of shattered ice.

"Don't hide, let's warm up a bit."

Luffy walked step by step, and his Conqueror's Haki continued to rise.

The terrifying power of Conqueror's at the Iv5 level caused even the ice

surface within a radius of kilometers to violently shake and tear apart.

At the same time, outside the ice layer, the sea surface in the distance suddenly began to freeze.

Pieces of shattered ice kept piling up, gradually forming the shape of Aokiji.

He crouched down, a trace of blood overflowing from the corner of his mouth.

"At this age, you actually mastered the winding of Conqueror's...??"

Aokiji had a confused expression, like a black question mark.

Aokiji knew that Luffy had Conqueror's Haki, he had read it clearly in the report about the new Shichibukai.

Luffy was a Devil Fruit user, he knew that, but he didn't know the specific abilities of the fruit.

However, Conqueror's winding was a power that only a very small number of top-tier strong individuals could master.

"Admiral's body is really tough. After taking my Haki winding, you only bleed a little?"

Luffy raised an eyebrow in surprise.

The power of that blow was much stronger than when he fought the sniper yesterday.

The power that could wipe out the town of Mock from the map, when it hit Aokiji, only made him bleed a little.

Upon hearing this, Aokiji wiped off the blood from the corner of his mouth, stood up, and smiled.

"Don't underestimate me, I am Admiral after all."

His expression became much more serious, his gaze fixed on Luffy. "But, it's truly jaw-dropping! Do you think Garp knows about your mastery of Haki?"

"Stop talking nonsense!"

With a step, Luffy's foot slammed onto the ice, causing it to crack. He seemed like a beam of light as he flew towards Aokiji.

Between his tightly clenched right fist, strands of black and red lightning emerged.

"Conqueror's Haki is indeed formidable, but even at a high level of mastery in Armament Haki, it can still be countered."

Aokiji didn't dodge or evade, instead, he met Luffy's Conqueror's Haki-infused attack with a punch of his own.

Boom!

Although their fists didn't directly collide, a terrifying shockwave erupted.

From the center of their clash, shockwaves spread rapidly in a spherical shape.

The speed of its expansion was even supersonic!

In an instant, the sea surface collapsed, forming a hemisphere with a diameter of one kilometer.

The thunderous sound reached even the altitude of ten thousand meters.

In the sky above Skypiea, before the bell on the Island could ring, the clash between the top experts from the Blue Sea had already awakened the Thunder God within the temple.

At an altitude of ten thousand meters.

Above the White White Sea.

Inside the temple's womb.

On the bed where the god resided.

God Enel suddenly opened his eyes.

Boom!

The rumbling sound that reached his ears made him furrow his brow.

"What is this?!"

Chapter 81 Get Rich Overnight!

Luffy: In This World, One God Is

Enough!

"What is this?!" Enel frowned.

As the god ruling over this Sky Island, he indeed possessed god-like power.

His Observation Haki, combined with his own Devil Fruit ability, allowed him to receive electromagnetic waves and listen to the sounds of all living beings on the entire island.

This power was known as "Mantra".

At this moment, the rumbling sound in his ears made him unhappy.

Closing his eyes and listening, his Observation Haki covered the entire Sky Island, but he couldn't find anything unusual.

"Hmm? Three ships are coming."

In his perception, he discovered an excellent navigator.

He could even hear what the people on the three ships were saying specifically.

Enel opened his eyes, and in the next moment, a flash of lightning flickered, and he had disappeared from the bed.

When he reappeared, he was at the entrance of the temple, and immediately a servant came to greet him.

"Lord Enel."

"Has the surveillance officer at the Gate of Heaven reported any anomalies?"

"There is a report of a group of tourists entering."

"There is a woman named 'Nami', bring her to me."

"Yes!"

At an altitude of ten thousand meters.

White White Sea.

The three ships broke through the clouds one after another and arrived above a vast expanse of white clouds.

The scene that appeared before everyone's eyes was like a fairy tale.

Islands made of white clouds, a sea of clouds, cloud bridges, and cloud houses, all floating in the sky.

The Merry Go.

"It's Sky Island!" Chopper exclaimed with great joy.

Usopp's eyes lit up, he took off his coat and plunged into the sea of clouds.

"Hey, Chopper! Come down too, there are clouds under the sea here!"

Usopp shouted excitedly.

"Fool, Chopper is a Devil Fruit user, don't get too excited, Usopp."

Sanji calmly spoke and then jumped into the sea as well. "Yahou~!"

Zoro looked disdainful and said, "Aren't you the same?"

New Witch's Tongue.

"Hah... hah..."

Bellamy was drenched in cold sweat, panting heavily.

The previous process was extremely dangerous, but they finally reached Sky Island. Bellamy looked at the distant scenery and was completely stunned.

Behind him, Sarquiss immediately shouted, "Count the number of people!

Did someone fall just now?"

"Vice Captain Sarquiss, Carrot... And Many people fell!"

The voice that answered still carried fear.

The Sunny Go.

"Is this Sky Island?"

Nami stared at the distant scenery, standing on the deck like a statue.

"So beautiful..."

Vivi was also stunned, her mouth wide open, unable to speak for a while.

The other girls had similar reactions.

Robin, however, was in a daze and couldn't appreciate the beauty:

"I'm a little worried about Luffy... Is he okay?"

"He's fine, Robin. We have to believe in him!" Nami regained her composure and comforted her.

Although they said that, they were also somewhat uneasy in their hearts.

Vivi took a deep breath and smiled, "Anyway, let's drop the anchor first.

Mr. Luffy will definitely come up soon!"

Time rewinds slightly.

Below Sky Island.

Boom!!!

Luffy's punch clashed with Aokiji's, and after a few seconds of stalemate, they were both pushed back by each other's power.

With a swoosh, Luffy flew backwards and crashed directly into the Masira pirates ship.

Entering from the side of the ship, piercing through it, and then crashing into the Shoujou Pirates ship again.

Inside the cabin.

"My strength..?"

Luffy stood up as if nothing had happened, leaped out of the broken gap, and arrived on the deck.

"Mr. Luffy!" the ape exclaimed in shock.

"I'm fine."

Luffy waved his hand and looked into the distance at Aokiji, who had also been sent flying.

Aokiji, who was flying backwards, left a long trail on the sea surface.

Wherever he passed, the sea froze, forming a straight ice path.

"My Haki was defeated!"

Aokiji's mind was greatly shaken.

Conqueror's Haki is indeed Conqueror's Haki, especially after mastering the ability to entangle, its destructive power far surpasses Armament Haki.

If it weren't for his own brute strength being stronger, he would be at a disadvantage in a fistfight.

Unbelievable!

Isn't Mr. Garp's grandson only 17 years old now?

"If not for his childish face.... I don't think I can win against that guy in a fight!"

Aokiji thought in shock. Are all people with the surname Monkey monsters?

If this kid goes to the New World, he might cause a huge commotion.

"I have a headache. Nico Robin boarded his ship, and I can't take her away on my own."

While saying these discouraged words, Aokiji stood up, but there was a smile on his face.

Luffy also laughed and rushed towards Aokiji again.

On the ice path.

A figure flashed in front of Aokiji, and Luffy had already appeared not far away.

Suddenly, both of them looked up.

In the direction of the rising sea current, figures were falling from the sky, flailing their arms and legs in a panic, as if trying to grab onto something, but they couldn't catch anything.

They were falling from thousands of meters high, and once they fell into the water, their bodies would be shattered like a watermelon.

Aokiji raised his eyebrows and said, "Look, your comrades are falling down."

"They are not my comrades, just pirates who came along for fun."

Luffy ignored it and calmly said, "Aokiji, with your current power, it's not enough to take my people away."

Aokiji did not refute this, as it was indeed the case.

"To settle the score with you, it would probably take a lot of time and effort. Forget it," Aokiji said with a lazy and helpless expression. "But you should be prepared. The darkness that woman carries is not something that can be easily resolved."

"Keep pretending," Luffy sneered in his heart, exposing his true intentions on the spot.

"Twenty years ago, Sengoku launched the Buster Call to destroy Ohara. At that time, you were one of the five Vice Admirals. Not only did you let Robin escape, but you also let another traitor, Vice Admiral 'Saul,' escape," Luffy revealed.

"!?" Aokiji's expression was shocked. "How do you know? Even Mr. Garp doesn't know about this."

"You traitor, I'm going to report your good deeds to Sengoku. Luckily, I have his Den Den Mushi number," Luffy said, seemingly smiling, and took out a Den Den Mushi on the spot.

"Wait!" Aokiji had a headache expression. "What are you trying to do?"

Of course, Luffy was just pretending. Even if he reported it, he couldn't do anything to Aokiji.

Of course, he had to thank Aokiji. If Aokiji hadn't let Robin escape, where would he find someone who could decipher history?

He didn't want to ask that old man, he didn't like him at all.

"Give up. Since Robin has joined my crew, I won't let you take her away, even if she's not an archaeologist but just an ordinary crew member,"

Luffy said.

Aokiji was speechless, threatening a Marine Admiral. You really are Garp's grandson!

"That woman has survived for 20 years by betraying others. Be careful, she might stab you," Luffy said.

"You don't need to worry about that."

"Even if I give up, the World Government will send someone else to do this kind of thing."

"Then bring it on."

"By opposing the government, the title you worked so hard to obtain will be taken away."

Aokiji couldn't help but frown.

Did Nico Robin give this kid some kind of brainwashing tonic?

Should I go back and remind Mr. Garp?

"Just a mere title?"

Luffy laughed.

It's no big deal, to just change the plan to save Ace.

No, even if he give up on Ace, he won't give up on Robin.

"So, do you understand?"

Luffy's smile disappeared, and he spoke seriously, "If you insist, then I can only kill you here!"

Kill me?

Aokiji was stunned for a moment.

It was not a joking tone at all, he was really prepared to do it, and he had such confidence.

After a brief exchange, he still had the confidence to say such words.

Where does this confidence come from?

Was he not using his full strength just now?

"You're a terrifying kid. I understand, I'm afraid of you, really..."

Aokiji picked up his coat from the ground and turned to leave, "I will report to the government that I didn't catch you. Are you satisfied now that you've reached Sky Island?"

Watching him walk away, Luffy smiled.

"Thanks, I'll say hello to my grandpa for you."

Aokiji raised his hand slightly and left without looking back.

No need for the bicycle either.

The Alliance members, who were watching from a distance, were dumbfounded.

"Did Admiral Aokiji admit defeat?"

"I don't know, but he left!"

"Mr. Luffy, are you okay?"

Someone shouted with concern.

"The Knock Up Stream is about to disappear, and there are no ships now.

If you want to go up..."

"Thank you, but don't worry."

Luffy waved his hand at them, and in the next moment, he entered Gear Fifth.

Boom!

He leaped up like a beam of light, and in the blink of an eye, he disappeared into the Skypiea clouds.

"What!?"

Aokiji's footsteps suddenly stopped, and his pupils contracted.

In his perception, of observation haki, in that instant just now, Luffy's

aura surged several times.

He suddenly turned around and looked at the distance with a serious expression.

However, unfortunately, the person had already entered the clouds, and he couldn't see the posture of the Sun God.

"This kid was holding back?!"

He muttered in disbelief.

Immediately after, he covered his abdomen, and the corners of his mouth twitched.

What a reckless little bastard, that kick just now caused him internal injuries!

"I was also careless, let's take a long vacation after we go back."

7000 meters above ground.

An endless sea of white clouds.

Luffy stood empty, his gaze searching around.

This is the White Sea.

Not far from the field of vision, there is a waterfall descending from the sky.

At the front of the waterfall is a building resembling a station.

The Gate of Heaven.

"It seems that Nami and the others have already gone up."

Thinking in his heart, Luffy immediately stepped into the air and arrived in front of the Gate of Heaven in an instant.

This place does resemble a station, except that the passing vehicles are not trains, but ships.

Beside the platform on the left, an elderly, wrinkled old lady walked out.

"I am the monitor of the Gate of Heaven, Amazon. Are you here for sightseeing or for a fight?"

"Did three ships pass by just now?"

"Yes. If you're here for sightseeing, the entry fee is 1 billion extols per person."

Saying so, the old lady picked up her camera and aimed it at Luffy, pressing the shutter.

Click.

However, in the next second after taking the photo, Luffy's figure flashed and appeared next to the old lady.

With his right hand, he snatched the camera and gave it a light squeeze.

With a bang, the camera turned into scrap metal.

"Are you here to fight?" The old lady couldn't detect any change in expression.

"Did those people from before pay?"

"They did, they were tourists."

Upon hearing this, Luffy grinned and said, "The ruler of your 'Kingdom of God' dare to call himself a God It doesn't make sense. I need to teach him a lesson. One god is enough in this world!"

As soon as he finished speaking, a white flame cloud appeared beneath his feet, transforming into a beam of silver light that instantly rushed into the country.

"Who are you?" the old lady shouted.

"The Sun God!"

Upon hearing this, the old lady's eyelids twitched. She made no attempt to stop him, nor did she have the power to do so.

She took out a communication device:

"This is the Gate of Heaven Surveillance Officer. I am reporting to the temple that a man claiming to be the Sun God has declared war on the gods!"

On the other side, passing through the Gate of Heaven, what came into Luffy's view was a winding path leading to the higher clouds.

Ships would depart from here and, with the help of the Sky Island's special express shrimp, ascend to the White Sea above and truly enter the territory of Sky Island.

But Luffy naturally didn't need all that trouble.

At this moment, he shot straight up, covering a mere three thousand meters in an instant.

As the light in front gradually became brighter and more dazzling, Luffy burst out of the White Sea and truly arrived at Sky Island.

[You have arrived at the new island, Kingdom of Gods SKYPIEA. Reward: 10,000 adventure coins.]

A familiar system prompt.

But it made Luffy pause in surprise.

"Ten thousand?"

He even suspected that he was seeing things, immediately opening his wallet.

[Adventure Coins]: 17,105

"Really ten thousand!? Why is Sky Island worth ten thousand?"

He wondered in astonishment.

East Blue, including the remaining West, South, and North Seas, each island is worth one hundred.

The islands in the Paradise Sea, each one is worth one thousand.

Perhaps in the New World, each island is worth thirty thousand.

But why is Sky Island worth ten thousand?

In the system's judgment, does Sky Island belong to the New World?

No, does Sky Island belong to a special "sea area"?

It's like going from East Blue to the Paradise Sea, the rewards increase

tenfold, and from the Paradise Sea to the White White Sea, the rewards are tenfold again!!

In short, get rich~

All kinds of strange Devil Fruits that I used to hesitate to buy, even various novel props and strengthening items, can now be bought openly.

"Let me see what I got today."

Luffy eagerly opens the adventure shop.

Under the sudden wealth, it would be a waste not to spend it.

[Ship Spirit Devil Fruit]: After feeding it to the ship, the ship will be possessed by a ship spirit and gain the ability of automatic navigation, priced at 1000 adventure coins.

Buy!

I've wanted to buy it for a long time, and I've seen it many times, but I just couldn't bring myself to buy it.

[Life Fruit (Boxed)]: A 5-in-1 gift box. After consumption, it grants one year of lifespan, priced at 1000 adventure coins.

Small change, buy!

[Awakening Fruit]: After use, there is a 100% chance of awakening one's own Devil Fruit power, priced at 1000 adventure coins. Special offer.

I'll pass on this one for now.

[Heightening Fruit (Boxed)]: A 10-in-1 gift box. After consumption, height increases by 10cm. Priced at 3000 adventure coins.

Strength may be temporary, but height is for a lifetime.

Bought it!

Luffy quickly scans through today's 10 items, and suddenly, his eyes light up. In the last tier, he sees something new.

[Rain Rain Fruit]: Logia Devil Fruit. After consumption, it grants the power to create rain, and since its a system product, unbelievably, it has

no side effects. Priced at 8000 adventure coins.

Today's 40% discount, 4800 adventure coins!

"So you can actually buy Devil Fruits?"

Luffy is very surprised. Maybe he has too much money, so the system keeps refreshing good things. That must be it!

Chapter 82 [Blank Fruit], The
Hunting of God · Enel

A Logia Devil Fruit, even at a discounted price, costs 4800 adventure coins.

Luffy fell into deep thought.

This thing is completely useless to him. A person cannot eat two Devil Fruits.

Blackbeard is a special case. How he managed to do it remains a mystery.

But the power of a Logia is unquestionable, not to mention a Devil Fruit without any side effects. It feels like a waste not to buy it, especially since it's on sale.

The price of 4800 is equivalent to 24 Haki fruits.

If the devil Fruit and 24 Haki fruits were placed in front of him at the same time, even an idiot would choose the latter.

"If I run out of money, I can earn more. I can personally go to several Sky Islands in this world. But if I don't buy it now, there's no guarantee it will be available next time."

Buy, buy, buy.

[Adventure Coins]: 17105 → 7305

In one go, Luffy spent nearly ten thousand and obtained four items.

1 Ship Spirit Fruit, 5 Life Extension Fruits, 10 Growth Enhancement Fruits, 1 Rain Fruit.

Luffy took out 10 Growth Enhancement Fruits and ate them in one bite.

In the next moment, his body underwent a change.

His height went from 1.74 meters to 1.84 meters in a short period of time.

"It seems like more than just a change in height..."

Luffy clenched his fist and thought to himself, "My strength has also increased a bit. It's like compressing several years of growth into a few seconds."

His physique became stronger.

It was as if he had spent two or three years out of thin air. While his body grew taller, it also came with an enhancement of his physical strength.

"The Life Extension Fruit doesn't have this effect. It simply increases some vitality."

In his contemplation, he took out a Life Extension Fruit and ate it.

[]: 73-74

"Indeed, it only increases vitality."

As for the remaining four Life Extension Fruits, he temporarily left them alone. As long as he didn't actively take them out, the system would continue to help preserve them.

But once taken out, they couldn't be put back.

As for the last Ship Spirit Fruit and Rain Fruit...

A flash of white light, and two fruits appeared in his hands at the same time.

The Rain Fruit is round in shape, covered with spiral patterns, and is not much different from the common Devil Fruit.

The Ship Spirit Fruit, about the size of a palm, is pure white and round, looking very delicious.

"How do I make the ship eat this thing?"

Luffy was completely confused and couldn't figure out how to make a

ship "eat" a small fruit.

There is a technique in this world to make inanimate objects "eat" Devil Fruits, but he is not sure how to do it specifically.

Thinking of this, Luffy looked into the distance.

About a kilometer away, there was a beach, and the Sunny and two other ships were docked on the shore.

Luffy saw Nami and the others and immediately flew over.

"Luffy!"

The Straw Hat Crew, who were playing on the beach, noticed Luffy's arrival one after another and breathed a sigh of relief.

"Luffy!"

Nami's face showed joy as she ran up to meet him, hugging Luffy and pressing his head against her soft and full bosoms.

"You really worried me!"

"Ugh?! Too tight! Are you trying to suffocate me?!"

"Ah~, sorry."

Nami smiled and let go of the hug, her face showing a strange expression.

"You've grown taller, haven't you?"

As she said that, she raised her hand and gestured, suddenly towering over her by half a head.

The others also gathered around, their faces filled with astonishment.

"Men, just need one day, and they can reach new heights."

Luffy casually made up a sentence.

Everyone: "Hasn't it only been a short time since we separated?"

Robin said softly, "Are you okay, Luffy?"

"What could be wrong? Aokiji was just going through the orders, he didn't plan to take you back."

Luffy shook his head, "If he really wanted to capture us, you wouldn't

have been able to escape at that time."

Having the ability to freeze, he can instantly freeze the surging sea currents.

Want to leave?

That can only mean underestimating Admiral.

In the original story, when the Straw Hat Crew first encountered Aokiji, that guy completely froze the sea area between two islands.

For ordinary people to walk from one island to another, it takes several days.

"In any case, you don't have to worry, as long as you're on my ship, no one can take you away."

After calming Robin down a bit, Luffy turned his head and saw Bellamy and his group not far away.

"Oh, you guys actually came up." He greeted them.

"Luffy-senpai!"

Bellamy led a part of the crew to come over.

There were about twenty people, about half as many as before.

He stood up straight and bowed, saying,

"Thank you very much! The previous me was indeed narrow-minded, not having seen the sky outside the well, ignorantly believing that Sky Island doesn't exist.

"Although we lost many comrades this time, we also gained something!"

"Next, we are prepared to explore this Sky Island. The Bellamy Pirates will never forget your kindness, and whenever you need it, at any time, we will repay today's favor!"

Bellamy said it solemnly.

He straightened up and handed over a piece of paper.

"What is this?" Usopp took it from his hand.

"This is my contact number. Well then, let's part ways here!"

Bellamy grinned and left the beach with the heavily injured Bellamy Pirates.

"This guy is quite unexpected," Sanji shook his head.

"Luffy, what should we do with this?" Usopp asked.

"keep it."

Although he doesn't need any repayment, it was their own choice to follow along, but after all, it was a kind gesture from someone else. It wouldn't be good to just throw away the phone number.

Suddenly, Luffy remembered something and asked:

"Did you all pay to enter?"

"Yes, each person pays 1 billion extols! At first, it was shocking, but later I realized it's equivalent to 100,000 berries!" Vivi nodded.

Luffy looked at Nami in disbelief.

This girl is actually willing to spend money?

"What? Why are you looking at me like that..." Nami blushed when she was seen through. "Without you around, we are not confident. To avoid unnecessary trouble, we decided to pay."

Pausing for a moment, she said angrily, "But it's really expensive, over 2 million berries!"

Luffy couldn't help but laugh. "There's a lot of gold on this island."

As he spoke, he walked towards the grass by the beach.

There were three reclining chairs made of island clouds in the pavilion.

He comfortably lay down on one of them.

As soon as she heard the word "gold," Nami's eyes turned into symbols of berries. She quickly came to his side and spoke in a gentle tone that made him electrified:

"Luffy~ What did you just say~"

"When you were on Jaya Island, did you also hear the story told by Cricket?"

Luffy held his head with both hands and casually said, "The story of the great swindler Nolan 400 years ago."

400 years ago, the navigator Mont Blanc Noland from North Blue had found the golden city Shandora.

After returning to his country, he told the king about this news, and the king was very happy. He personally led a fleet to the Grand Line.

But there was no gold at all, and Noland was executed on charges of deception.

However, he never denied the existence of the golden city until his death.

His last words were probably...

Shandora does exist!

"What does that mean?" Nami widened her eyes. "Is Shandora in this sky?"

"The key words are Knock Up Stream, Jaya Island, Sky Island."

Luffy smiled giving an indirect answer.

Robin pondered for a moment.

"When I was down below before, I saw a map of Jaya Island. It was missing a large area and didn't look complete, so...does that mean that place called the golden city was carried up to the sky by the Knock Up Stream?"

Nami was struck by lightning and stood up abruptly, holding Robin's hand, and said excitedly:

"Robin, let's go together and find the treasure! Vivi, you should come too!"

Robin shook her head with a light laugh.

Nami was as understanding as always.

Seeing that she wasn't going, Nami turned her head to Vivi.

"Vivi, you owe me 1.2 billion berries, so you definitely have to come!"

"Eh?!"

Vivi couldn't refuse, even though she actually owed it to Mr. Luffy.

"Alright, Nami, I'll accompany you in the search," she reluctantly agreed.

"And your team too!" Nami quickly added.

So this was their plan?

Vivi looked helpless.

Vice captain Bartolomeo rushed over immediately.

"Nami, don't worry, even if we have to turn Sky Island upside down, our second team will definitely help you find the treasure!"

"Let's go!"

Nami was full of enthusiasm, pointing to a distant cloud path. "There should be a city over there. Let's go ask for information first! Luffy, why don't you come too!"

She wasn't at ease and wanted to bring their strongest fighter along.

"You go. Barto, protect them well."

"Yes, Captain Luffy!"

Immediately, Nami led the entire second team crew in the direction of Angel Island.

Watching them go in search of the treasure, Usopp sighed.

"When it comes to money, Nami turns into a devil. Luffy, aren't you going to do anything about it?"

"Don't worry, I'll educate her properly."

[Hmm, let me teach her properly at night.]

Luffy took out the ship's spirit fruit and said to the remaining crew members,

"Do you know about ship spirits?"

"Ship spirits? Ah, I've heard of them," Sanji sat cross-legged and recalled, "I heard that when the crew and the ship form a deep bond, a little spirit with a wooden hammer appears. But that's just a legend, right? Ship spirits and all that..."

"It's true," Luffy raised the fruit in his hand and smiled, "This fruit is called the Ship Spirit Fruit. As long as you feed it to a ship, a ship spirit will appear."

"What!?"

Usopp snatched the fruit from his hand and observed it with curiosity on his face.

Chopper said dumbfoundedly, "But how do we feed the ship?"

I don't know, that's why I'm asking you guys.

Luffy himself couldn't figure out how to feed this thing.

At this moment, Zoro suggested,

"The ship spirit is similar to a God, right? Is this thing an offering? If we make an offering, will the ship spirit come and eat it?"

Everyone was shocked and looked at him in disbelief.

Zoro blushed, "What are you guys trying to say?!"

"Genius!" Usopp gasped, "Zoro, I underestimated you before!"

Sanji stood up and patted his shoulder, sighing, "I'm sorry Moss boy."

Chopper admired, "Zoro, you're so smart!"

"I'm going to kill you all!"

Zoro immediately transformed into a shark's mouth and drew his sword, ready to attack.

"Hahaha, you guys should go try it."

Luffy couldn't help but laugh, thinking that this might actually work.

[Zoro, even I underestimated you.]

Immediately, Usopp took Chopper and Sanji and ran to the Merry to

experiment.

Johnny and Yosaku quickly abandoned their own captain and followed to join in the fun.

On the beach, only Zoro, Robin, and Luffy remained.

"Luffy, since you know about the Golden city, do you know where it is specifically?"

Upon hearing this, Luffy unexpectedly glanced at the woman. Has she become smart after being with him for so long?

"I roughly know the general area."

"Why not tell Nami and let them go find it?"

Zoro lay down on the nearby chair and took out a bottle of alcohol to drink.

...

"If they know, there won't be any sense of exploration. Why would I take away their fun? Besides, the treasure will not disappear."

Luffy shook his head and took out the Rain fruit, contemplating who to give it to.

First, of course, he had to choose between Nami and Vivi.

The others could wait for now.

When it came to his women, he tried to treat them equally.

Both of them held the same position in his heart.

Unfortunately, there was only one Devil Fruit, and it was truly difficult to decide who to give it to.

Nami had the talent of a navigator, and the Rain Fruit might have a powerful effect for her.

Vivi's country was a desert nation, always lacking rain. With the power of this fruit, it might be able to improve the situation in Alabasta.

Although Nami had said before that she didn't want to eat a Devil Fruit,

it was because she didn't want to become a "dry duck."

This fruit was special and had no side effects.

He believed that Nami definitely wanted it.

But Vivi also needed it.

"Maybe I should try refreshing again, in case another one appears?"

Thinking in his heart, Luffy glanced at his savings.

There were still over 7,000, just enough to refresh and get a Haki fruit, raising his Observation Haki to v5.

Thinking it through, he immediately opened the Adventure Shop.

[You spent 20 Adventure Coins, and the Adventure Shop has stocked a new batch of goods.]

With a sweep of his gaze, Luffy froze.

He saw another type of merchandise he had never seen before.

[Blank Fruit]: Placed beside a recently deceased ability user, it absorbs the dispersed fruit ability of the other person and transforms into the corresponding Devil Fruit. System product, the Devil Fruit born this way has no side effects.

Price: 5,000 Adventure Coins

No discount, it is the first item at the top.

In an instant of seeing this thing, he immediately thought of someone.

God·Enel, Logia Thunder Fruit user!

Might as well kill him and take away his fruit ability, then there will be two Logia fruits, which can perfectly solve his own troubles.

They are all Logia, and there are no side effects.

This bowl of water is so flat!

The only problem is... it's really expensive.

Rain Fruit costs 4800, and the Blank Fruit costs 5000.

The rewards for coming to Sky Island today have been eaten up by them.

System, is this also part of your calculation?!

Sure enough, money comes and goes quickly.

[Adventure Coins]: 7305→2285

Luffy stood up and said to Zoro beside him,

"I have a plan."

"What?"

"The plan to hunt down the god."

"Huh?"

Luffy grinned and gestured for Zoro to follow, "The ruler of this Sky

Island is a god, let's go kill him. Robin, are you coming?"

"Killing a god?"

Robin's face was full of reluctance, "It's very dangerous, you guys do your best, Luffy."

"There seems to be a piece of historical text in the place where the god is." Luffy teased.

Robin's body trembled, her eyes widened.

"What a wicked man~!"

She smiled slightly, closed the book in her hand, and elegantly stood up from the cloud chair.

"Let's go, Captain Luffy!"

Chapter 83 Sun God Vs Thunder

God

"Luffy, where is the god you mentioned?"

Zoro looked up at the sky, the midday sun was a bit dazzling.

"The place we are in now is called Angel Island."

Luffy walked towards the Merry Go, explaining, "This is Angel Beach on Angel Island. In the northwest direction of this beach, there is a larger island called 'Sacred Domain' by the people of Sky Island. It is also known

as the Island of Gods."

"The Island of Gods? An island where deities reside? Could it be a part of Jaya Island brought up by the Knock Up Stream?" Robin pinched her chin and speculated.

Truly a clever archaeologist, her mind worked quickly.

"How do we get to that Island of Gods?" Zoro asked.

"Of course, by boat. Do you expect me to carry you there? Robin is one thing, but I don't want to bring two people," Luffy replied.

In his words, Luffy leaped onto the Merry Go.

Usopp and the others were gathered at the bow of the ship. Hearing the commotion behind them, Usopp turned around nervously and said,

"Luffy, you... look!"

He moved aside, and Luffy and the others finally saw the strange scene.

A peculiar creature wearing a green cloak and holding a small wooden hammer stood there. The cloak's hat covered most of its face, only revealing its mouth.

It was less than a meter tall, similar to Chopper.

But strangely, this thing seemed to have a foggy glass effect, even though it was standing right in front of everyone, it looked very blurry.

"Luffy, is this a ship spirit?" Sanji's face was filled with astonishment. "We put that fruit on the deck just now, and this thing appeared and ate the fruit!"

Although he took out the fruit, it was also Luffy's first time seeing a ship spirit.

Curiously, he took a few steps forward, crouched down, and tried to communicate.

"What should I call you?"

"Going Merry.." The little spirit's mouth opened slightly, like a newborn

baby, trying hard to learn to speak.

"Merry, are you a ship spirit?"

Merry nodded.

"What can you do? How do we use the automatic navigation?"

"Tell... direction... or... destination..."

Upon hearing this, Robin blinked her eyes in surprise and said, "Does that mean he will help us sail the ship?"

I'm not sure about that, communication is a bit difficult.

Luffy thought for a moment and said to the rest of the crew,

"Next, we're going to hunt down the Thunder God. Usopp, are you going to stay on the ship?"

There's no need to consider that at all. Usopp immediately jumped off the ship.

Following suit, Johnny and Yosaku also jumped off the ship together.

"Luffy, even though I don't know what a Thunder God is, I really want to help you. But someone needs to stay behind on the Sunny, leave it to me!" Usopp gave a thumbs up and smiled, saying, "Have a safe journey!"

"Have a safe journey, Luffy, Zoro, Sanji, Robin!" Johnny and Yosaku echoed.

Robin smiled lightly and said,

"What are you afraid of? Don't you have Luffy with you?"

After the events that had transpired, her confidence in Luffy had reached an extremely high level.

After all, he had even repelled a Marine Admiral. This so-called God of Skypiea couldn't be that formidable.

"We do need someone to stay here. Usopp, we'll leave the Sunny to you."

Luffy nodded and stood up, saying to Merry, "Can you go to the northwest direction, to the Island of Gods?"

Upon receiving the command, Merry immediately transformed into green particles and merged into the ship's figurehead.

In the next moment, the ship started moving.

The anchor chain automatically retracted, the sails opened up, and the rudder moved without anyone controlling it.

Following the instructions, the Merry Go sailed towards its destination.

The people on the ship were all astonished.

"It's really moving."

"Luffy, where did you get something like that? It's unbelievable!"

"It's similar to the Six Styles fruit, really amazing."

Ignoring the comments of the three, Luffy suddenly came up with a great idea.

If I directly tell Merry to go to Laugh Tale, can we go directly to the final island?

After returning , we must try it out!

After about half an hour of sailing, the island came into view.

Unlike Angel Island, the distant island is made up of land.

The island is covered with dense forests, and ancient trees can be seen everywhere.

"Does that Thunder God live in this place?" Sanji lit a cigarette and stared at the distant scenery.

"It's a Demon fruit power, and he has four priests under him."

After approaching the coast, Luffy jumped off the ship first: "There are remnants of the golden city of Shandora in this place, quite far away.

Come along."

The three of them got off the ship one after another, and as for the

Merry, it automatically retracted its sails and dropped anchor.

"The trees here are really big, several hundred years old? No, even if it's

several hundred years, they shouldn't be this tall and thick." Zoro looked around.

Under Luffy's lead, the group headed straight for their destination.

400 years ago, the golden city of Shandora, which was carried to the sky by the Knock-Up Stream, was pierced by a huge beanstalk when it reached the highest point and was about to fall.

Later, in order to compete for this island, the people of Sky Island and the people of Shandora fought a long war.

In the end, the people of Sky Island won.

"The people of Sky Island built a temple on that beanstalk."

Luffy concluded.

"Was it for the gold?" Robin frowned.

"No, the people of Sky Island did it for this land, called 'Vearth' on Sky Island. The people of Shandora were more concerned with guarding the historical text."

"The historical text..." Robin was very interested and wanted to see it with her own eyes.

In response, Luffy didn't directly say what the historical text specifically recorded, so as not to disappoint her.

At the same time.

On the giant beanstalk, in the temple.

Enel lay on the bed, supporting his head with one hand, and holding an apple in the other, casually biting into it.

"This blue sea dweller knows quite a lot. Hahaha, interesting, do you want to come hunt me?"

He swallowed the apple along with the core, then wiped the fruit crumbs off the corners of his mouth with his thumb.

"Go inform the priest and bring these four people back."

"Yes, Enel-sama!"

The servant, who was fat and almost spherical in shape, went off to carry out the order.

"There's still some time before the completion of the ship, so I'll play with you a little, person from Qinghai."

Lost in thought, Enel raised his left hand with his palm facing the sky.

Electricity flickered on his body, and the power of raging thunder gathered in his palm, finally striking the sky.

"Divine punishment!"

In the forest.

Luffy suddenly looked up, a slight smile forming at the corners of his mouth.

"You guys should move away."

The three of them looked up and immediately saw a beam of light descending from the sky. Without thinking too much after hearing Luffy's warning, they quickly moved away in all directions.

Boom!

A colossal, ten-meter-wide pillar of light descended from the sky, piercing the ground with incredible force.

"Luffy!" Zoro's expression shifted.

Luffy, squarely struck by the attack, was enveloped in the explosive energy.

Robin gasped, covering her mouth as she exclaimed, "That sound... It's the atmosphere expanding at the speed of sound—thunder!"

"Thunder?" Sanji asked incredulously, "Could that be the Thunder God's technique?"

The intense lightning had come suddenly but dissipated just as swiftly.

When the light dissipated, Luffy stood there unharmed, except for a

hollow circular area formed outside the spot where his feet stood.

The island was pierced through!

"Are you okay?" Zoro looked surprised.

Sanji slapped his palm and suddenly realized, "Luffy is made of rubber, so he's not afraid of electricity. That's how it is!"

"It's not rubber, it's the Sun God."

Luffy patted the nonexistent dust off his body and said, "I'm a little annoyed that I was struck by lightning for no reason. You guys can come over slowly, I'll go beat him up first."

As he spoke, he had already entered Gear Second.

"By the way, on your way here, you might encounter a few priests, so be careful," he warned.

Robin whispered, "It's not without reason. After all, we're on a mission to take down the gods. It's a matter of self-defense, isn't it?"

"Indeed," Zoro nodded.

The temple.

Enel frowned.

"Rubber? What's that?" he asked.

Born on Sky Island, he had never heard of it.

In his perception of the Mantra, a presence flew towards him at an extremely fast speed.

He suddenly looked up and saw a silver light streaking across the sky, then falling into the temple.

Enel squinted slightly.

"Is it a Devil Fruit user?"

"Good afternoon, God Enel," Luffy greeted with a light laugh. Looking around, he saw dozens of shocked divine soldiers.

"Who are you!?" someone angrily shouted.

"I'm not here for you, so get out of the way," Luffy glanced at the person, and in an instant, they collapsed with their eyes rolled back.

Enel: *...•

What's going on?

Why did his divine weapon fall?

He don't understand!

It's like how ordinary people can't understand why physical attacks are ineffective against him.

At this moment, he also doesn't understand why his subordinates faint with just a glare from someone.

"I received a report earlier that there was an illegal immigrant, a man who claimed to be the Sun God, was it you?"

"...."

Luffy grinned and said, "Enel, this world doesn't need two gods, and besides, you're a false god."

"Hahaha.... interesting, really interesting."

Enel changed his position from lying on his side to sitting cross-legged.

His right elbow rested on his knee, his fist supporting his chin, his head slightly tilted, and he looked relaxed.

"I'm in a good mood, so I'll give you a chance to challenge me."

As he spoke, his other hand opened its five fingers, "Five minutes, I'll sit here without moving, and you can attack me as much as you want."

Pausing for a moment, he added, "But after five minutes, I will strike again and punish your three subordinates."

"Oh, you're quite particular."

Luffy couldn't help but laugh.

After a light laugh, his figure moved and disappeared from the original spot.

R...!

Enel's pupils contracted, shocked in his heart.

His Haki almost failed to capture the opponent's movement trajectory, let alone predict it.

Enel's gaze suddenly became sharp, quickly locking onto the area in front of the bed.

That silver-white figure abruptly appeared in his field of vision, with only a fist descending towards his face.

The next moment,

Boom!!

Enel was bewildered to find that everything in his field of vision suddenly shifted and then tilted at an angle.

No, it was his hair that had moved.

Before the sensation of pain reached his brain, Enel's head was thrust into the bed beneath him by a punch.

It was as if a tea shoot had been uprooted and bent over, with its head buried in the ground.

Luffy pulled his fist back and calmly spoke, "Don't worry, there's still over four minutes left."

Zap! In a flash of lightning, Enel's body quickly disappeared from the bed.

Luffy turned around and saw Enel holding his crooked jaw, staring at him in disbelief.

"How did you manage to hit me!?"

"Can't handle it? You said you wouldn't move, but you are already running away. I even went easy on you, you're really boring."

Luffy's face darkened, clearly displeased.

Enel's body was surrounded by flickering lightning.

He wasn't an idiot. When he realized that Luffy could hit him, sitting there and taking a beating would be foolish.

Since obtaining the power of the thunder, he had never been humiliated like this before.

Having lost interest in playing, a murderous glint appeared on his face.

"30 million volts, Thunderbird!"

Swinging the staff in his hand, he struck the drum behind him. In the next second, the terrifying power of lightning erupted, giving birth to a thunderbird that quickly attacked Luffy.

Luffy walked towards his opponent expressionlessly.

The terrifying thunderbird landed on him, but it couldn't inflict any damage.

Crackling lightning flickered around him as Luffy reached out and actually grabbed the lightning in his hand.

"What!?"

Enel's eyes were about to pop out. Why would someone be able to catch lightning, an energy like this, with their bare hands?

"Can't you understand? If you can't understand, then it's 0.0."

While mocking him, Luffy tore apart the Thunderbird that was wrapped around him as if he was tearing off his clothes.

Enel immediately showed an expression of disbelief, even suspecting that his eyes were playing tricks on him.

"How is this possible? My power... What are you!?"

"The Sun God, your natural enemy."

Luffy grabbed the Thunderbird with both hands and kept squeezing it, violently compressing the power of lightning between his hands, eventually turning it into a palm-sized thunderball.

In the next moment, he threw it fiercely towards Enel.

The thunderball hit Enel and burst into a dazzling light.

Boom!!

The terrifying power of thunder erupted, instantly sweeping through the temple and engulfing everything around it.

"What a joke! Using thunder to attack me? Using my own power to attack me? I am a god!"

Enel became furious and released all of his power.

200 million volts, Amaru form!

The cloak formed by lightning wrapped around his body, and suddenly, Enel transformed into the form of a Thunder God.

However, before he could make a move...

A beam of white light instantly pierced through his Amaru form.

Luffy grabbed Enel's neck with his right hand and with a loud bang, slammed him directly onto the ground.

The terrifying lightning still couldn't cause the slightest bit of damage to him.

Enel's face became blank.

"Even among gods, there are differences! Your Thunder Fruit is indeed powerful, but it pales in comparison to my own fruit."

While saying this, Luffy lifted Enel into the air.

Enel was shocked to find that he couldn't even transform into an element.

The force gripping his neck tightened, making it difficult for him to even convey his voice.

"Sun God is truly superior to everything!"

Notes

I am having some trouble these days. Anyways here are some updates

Chapter 84 Start With Thunder

Fruit! The Captured Blackbeard

Gang, And Admiral Targeting Ace!

Rubber, an insulator, is a material that does not exist in Sky Island.

However, the power of millions of volts of lightning cannot be withstood by simple rubber.

When faced with ultra-high voltage lightning, insulators also generate high temperatures.

The high temperature is enough to melt rubber and cause significant damage.

However, the Nika form, also known as the Sun God, is almost immune to heat-based damage.

In the original story, even the fiery breath of the Four Emperors, Kaido, which can obliterate a mountain, only turns Luffy's body black, and he can recover in a matter of seconds.

Similarly, because he is a Sun God and possesses rubber properties, he can also catch lightning with his bare hands.

This is a complete and total restraint on the Thunder Fruit from top to bottom.

Calling it a natural enemy is not an exaggeration!

At this moment, Luffy pinches Enel's neck and lifts him up.

"The fruit is truly superior to everything else!"

Enel cannot move and struggles to breathe.

Overwhelmed by the overwhelming power, he can't even think about how to escape.

As Luffy tightens his five fingers, his consciousness begins to fade.

"Where is the ship you are building that can fly?"

Taking advantage of the fact that Enel hasn't passed out yet, Luffy calmly asks, "Did you use Skypiea's gold to build that ship?"

Enel grabs Luffy's wrist and tries to move his mouth, but can only make a

faint sound.

"Your...purpose...is the ship?!"

"I happen to need a ship recently, and the number of crew members is increasing."

Just for a ship?!

Veins pop up on Enel's forehead.

"Let me go...!"

"That won't do. If I let go, you will escape by elementalization. The speed of lightning is still very fast, and even I might not be able to catch up.

Even if I can catch up, it would be a waste of time.

The Merry Go does have a pair of seastone handcuffs, but I don't have them on me.

Luffy can only use Armament Haki to grasp Enel's true form, ensuring that this unlucky individual doesn't escape.

"Tell me, where is the ship? If you don't tell me, I can have someone find it... hmm?"

As he spoke, Luffy raised an eyebrow and glanced towards the outside of the temple.

Accompanied by the roar of a certain beast, an old man in armor rode a flying Pegasus and approached with a long spear in hand.

Gan Fall, who had noticed the disturbance in the temple, arrived at this moment and witnessed a shocking scene.

6 years ago, Enel, who had taken his temple and stolen the power of the gods, was now like a defeated dog, being held up by another man by the neck.

"Who are you?" Gan Fall asked in shock.

A silver figure, white hair burning like flames, a face never seen before.

An outsider?

Luffy withdrew his gaze from the other person and immediately unleashed Armament Haki.

Haki flowed through the hand holding Enel, directly entering his body.

Internal destruction!

Boom!!

Enel groaned, his spine instantly shattered, and Armament Haki destroyed his internal organs.

Blood overflowed from his mouth, staining a large area on his chest.

Enel lost consciousness, his eyes devoid of spirit, and his head drooped.

"He's dead?!" Gan Fall exclaimed, wide-eyed.

[What did the man with white hair do?]

At the same time...

The Null Fruit, hanging on Luffy's waist, prevented the Thunder Fruit from reincarnating. After Enel's death, the power that should have been reborn somewhere in the world was absorbed by the Null Fruit.

Subsequently, the shape of the fruit changed, and complex spiral patterns appeared on its surface, As it turned into the Thunder Fruit!

After completing all this, Luffy threw Enel's body aside and sat down on the bed.

Crossing his legs, he casually picked up an apple next to him.

Taking a bite, he asked:

"Are you the original god? What was your name again?"

"Gan·Fall.... Who are you?"

Gan·Fall snapped back to reality, jumping off the Heavenly Horse and landing next to Enel.

With a glance, he confirmed that the other party was really dead.

He actually died!

Enel, who ruled this Sky Island for six years, died so mysteriously?

The situation was too bizarre, and he still couldn't believe it.

"I am the Sun God, Monkey D. Luffy."

"Is that so? Are you also here to rule Skypiea..."

Gan·Fall's heart sank.

One god died, and now another god appeared?

"No, I'm not interested in your land. I'm just passing through."

Luffy shook his head and said, "The person at your feet happens to have something I need."

It's not that he's not interested in ruling, but he's not interested in ruling just a Sky Island.

It's too insignificant, only Enel would be so boring.

Gan·Fall paused for a moment, then realized something was wrong.

"Are you from the blue sea? I heard that three pirate ships came here before."

Luffy neither confirmed nor denied, and said frankly, "I know you. You were the ruler of this Sky Island before, the former god."

"Yes." Gan·Fall nodded and admitted his identity. "Six years ago, Enel forcibly occupied this place with his subordinates and subjected the people of this country to terrifying oppression. After destroying his hometown, a Sky Island called Birka, he came here..."

Luffy, of course, knew the story behind all this, but he wasn't interested in saying much.

He waved his hand and said, "I can return your country to you. I will leave afterwards, and I'm not particularly interested in your Sky Island. But there are two conditions."

Upon hearing this, Gan·Fall trembled all over.

"Really? You liberated this country, killed Enel, you are our hero. Even if it's two conditions, I will do my best to help you fulfill them."

Happiness came too suddenly. For these six years, he had always wanted to resist, but his power was too weak, and he was no match for Enel.

He couldn't even defeat the priests under Enel's command.

So when he heard Luffy say this, he agreed without hesitation.

"Condition one, Enel stole Skypiea's gold and built a ship on this island. It should be hidden in a cave. Help me find it."

"Condition two, when we entered the country, my navigator paid over two million in entry fees. Please return it to her, otherwise I am afraid my navigator may have hard time sleeping the new few days."

Upon hearing this, Gan Fall was stunned.

Is this also a condition?

Could it be that this person is actually a good person?

He thought that the other party would demand some compensation, such as asking each Sky Islander to contribute money, or valuable items, or even ask for some beautiful women or slaves...

After all, the other party is a pirate.

These are the conditions that pirates like to mention!

"Is that all?" Gan Fall asked incredulously.

"That's it, I'm not interested in anything else," Luffy finished eating an apple, threw the core aside, and smiled. "By the way, that ship should not be completely finished yet, so please help finish it."

Enel's goal is to sail his ship to the moon and establish a true divine kingdom.

Since he hasn't left yet, it means the ship is not yet finished.

But it shouldn't take much longer, probably just a day or two.

"Luffy-sama, I understand. I will do it immediately!"

Gan Fall took a deep breath, confirmed that this guy was really a good person, and immediately jumped onto his Heavenly Horse and flew into

the sky.

Watching him fly away, Luffy finally had time to take out the Thunder Fruit and examine it carefully.

The ship Enel built is a spaceship that can fly to the moon, but its power source is lightning and it relies on the Thunder Fruit.

"Thunder for Nami, Rain for Vivi, plus Enel's ship, perfect!"

With this, the Straw Hat crew will have two Logia users.

Of course, they still can't be compared to the Four Emperors crew.

Luffy himself can indeed reach the level of the Four Emperors in terms of combat power, but his subordinates... are far behind the other Four Emperors crews.

"I wonder what those two are doing now?"

Lovely Street.

Nami, along with the members of the second division and her sister Nojiko, Vivi, and Miss Kaya, happily strolled through the streets of Sky Island, attracting curious glances from the locals.

Sky Island has developed a unique civilization, with many everyday items built on "Dials."

There are many types of dials on Sky Island: wind dials, cloud dials, sound dials, water dials, light dials, laser dials, impact dials, and so on, making for a dazzling array.

Nami and the others, who had never seen such novel things before, went on a shopping spree.

Fortunately, Beli is the world currency and is also accepted on Sky Island.

After buying a bunch of different types of Sky Island dials, the group of women continued to explore the clothing stores.

"Nami, did you forget our original purpose? Nojiko said helplessly.

"You've bought enough already. Look at them, they can barely carry

anything more."

"Hehe, let's buy some clothes for Luffy too. He only has a few outfits," Nami stuck out her tongue and silently put down the latest trendy dress from Sky Island, then turned to look at the members of the second division.

Each of them was carrying large and small bags, and the situation suddenly became difficult.

"We've spent too much money! We need to find gold first and earn the money back!"

At this moment, a group of men wearing white shell hats quickly burst into the store.

Seeing this group of people, the people of Sky Island, including the store clerks, became nervous.

"Are you tourists from the blue sea?"

Upon hearing the voice, Nami and the others turned their gaze towards it.

The leader of the men raised his right hand, with his index finger and pinky finger raised, placed it on top of his head, and made a greeting gesture unique to the people of Sky Island.

"Heso.."

"Heso.."

"I am Captain McKinley of the White Berets, and I came from the Temple following God's Order. Among you, who is Nami?"

McKinley's gaze swept over the crowd and finally settled on Nami.

"It's me, what's the matter?" Nami stood up. "We already paid to enter and are legal tourists."

"That's not important. Since you are Nami, come with me to the Temple to meet the gods."

The captain said solemnly, "Consider yourself honored, people from blue sea. Even we find it difficult to see the Divine God. You have the opportunity to do so, so be grateful."

"Huh? Why?" Nami laughed, finding it strange that a god suddenly appeared and wanted her to meet him.

"Do you want to resist? God will bring down sanctions!" McKinley said in a deep voice.

At this moment, a member of the second team, Mr.1, stepped forward silently and stood in front of Nami.

Immediately after, Mr.3 jumped out and said, "Be careful with your tone, Sky Island people. Miss Nami is Mr. Luffy's...".

"Step back, Mr.3."

"Yes, Miss Nami!" Mr.3 quickly took two steps back.

Nami crossed her arms and asked with interest, "The god you mentioned, should know where the gold is, right?"

"Gold?" McKinley was confused.

"Golden City... never mind. Take me there!"

Nami was ready to ask in person about the god, who seemed to hold a high position and surely knew something.

The temple.

Luffy lay on the bed and yawned.

His Observation Haki could cover the entire island, including Angel Island.

What Enel could do, he could do something similar.

However, without the Thunder Fruit, he couldn't hear exactly what Nami was saying.

"They are moving towards this island?" Luffy raised his eyebrows and shook his head. "The Sky Island people brought them here, using the

Milky Road, right?"

After going through so much trouble to find the gold, it turned out that the gold had been transformed into a ship...

He was eagerly anticipating Nami's reaction to this revelation.

As for the other side.

Robin, Zoro, and Sanji had already entered the ruins of Shandora.

They encountered four priests and were now engaged in a fierce battle.

To be precise, it was Zoro and Sanji fighting against four.

Robin was busy exploring the ruins.

"As for Zoro, it's fine, but can Sanji handle it? He only knows one of the Six Styles."

Luffy observed with great interest.

His Observation Haki can only detect auras, and from the strength of the auras, he can barely outline the situation of a battle.

Observation Haki is the ability to sense the presence, strength, and emotions of others, as well as gain limited precognitive abilities.

At an advanced level, it can even predict the immediate future.

Just as the Straw Hat Crew landed on Sky Island and defeated God Enel.

Below, on the Blue Sea, on the Grand Line.

On the deck of a warship.

"Admiral Aokiji, are we really going back like this?" said a colonel with a speechless expression.

"I have no choice. They've already escaped to the sky," Aokiji replied, lying on the sun chair, wearing an eye mask, sounding helpless, as if he were serious.

"But we will definitely be scolded by the Fleet Admiral. How about we patrol this sea area for a while? The Straw Hat Crew will eventually come down, right?" the colonel suggested.

Come down?

Aokiji took off his eye mask and glanced at his subordinate.

So what if they come down?

He couldn't really do anything to Straw Hat Luffy. After all, he is Vice Admiral Garp's grandson, and out of respect for his master, he couldn't do much.

If they were determined to protect Nico Robin, all he could do was shrug and admit defeat.

And to be honest, he wasn't very interested in capturing Nico Robin either.

It has been 20 years, and the government claimed she was the key to releasing demons, but the world hasn't changed much.

"I don't know what to do either..." Aokiji said, a little confused, as he put his eye mask back on.

The position of the Marines, the relationship between master and disciple, the slight guilt over what happened in the past, the confusion over Saul's choice all made him to lazy...

At that moment, the Den Den Mushi made a buzzing sound.

The colonel picked up the receiver, and the voice of the Fleet Admiral came from the other end.

"Aokiji, how is the situation?"

Aokiji lay still and lazily said, "Sorry, they got away."

"Don't joke with me. With your strength, you're telling me someone got away? If you're going to make excuses, at least come up with a better one. I'm the one who reports to the higher-ups!" Den Den mushi imitated the tone and demeanor of Sengoku.(□□□□)

"I was caught off guard. That Straw Hat Luffy has the power of Conqueror's Haki. No one in the intelligence told me about that," Aokiji

used one of his three workplace skills, shifting blame.

"What did you say?!" Sengoku's attention was indeed diverted, his tone shocked.

Impossible!

How is this possible?

Garp's grandson is still so young?

On this vast sea, a power that only a few true strong individuals can master is actually controlled by a mere teenager?

That bastard Aokiji, could he be lying?

No, although Aokiji is lazy, he wouldn't tell such lies.

Sitting in the Fleet Admiral's office, Sengoku was momentarily stunned.

After a quiet moment, he took a deep breath and said,

"Put that matter aside for now. I have a more important task for you. If you complete this, the government won't have anything to say!"

Admirals really have busy lives.

Aokiji touched his abdominal injury and helplessly said, "What is it?"

"The intelligence department of the Crane has obtained sighting information on 'Fire Fist' Ace. You need to go immediately and bring him back! This time, no fooling around! Understand?"

For the World Government, compared to long-term threats like Nico Robin, it was obviously more urgent to deal with Fire Fist Ace in the current situation.

"Ah... Whitebeard's captain. Understood."

After cutting off the communication, Aokiji stood up and selected a bike from the deck.

Then he rode off.

"You guys go back to headquarters first. I'll go carry out the mission."

"Eh? What about the pirates we caught yesterday?"

"Send them to prison. They're just small fry."

"Understood."

Notes

Why is my pc taking so long to get repaired, I really hate these types of shop promising to repair my pc within three days now it's almost a month. ☹️☹️

Chapter 85 Showdown, Nami And

Vivi's Choice! Bells Resounding

Through The Sky!

A crescent moon gradually rises in the night sky, and the sparkling starlight seems to be mischievous children opening their eyes, twinkling overhead.

Luffy yawned and boredly lay on the bed in the temple.

"Hmm? Awake?"

Raising an eyebrow, Luffy sat up and looked at the scattered divine soldiers lying on the ground in the temple.

In addition to dozens of divine soldiers wearing white clothes, there were also two divine maidens on both sides of the bed, who used to serve Enel, the person from Sky Island.

These people all have a pair of small wings on their backs, which only works as decorations.

At this moment, these people woke up one after another and were shocked to see the mess in the temple.

Looking up, they saw Luffy sitting on the bed.

"Who... who are you?! Where is Enel Sama?" One of the fat men exclaimed in panic and anger.

"Behind you."

Luffy pointed with his hand.

Everyone looked and immediately saw Enel's body, their faces turning pale.

"Ai... Enel Sama, dead?!"

"A few of you clean up the temple, and you..."

Saying that, Luffy looked at the divine maiden who had just woken up beside him and ordered, "Go prepare some food."

The divine maiden looked confused, but still instinctively followed the order.

Before long, Luffy took control of the entire temple.

Originally, this place was not big, and there weren't many people in total.

After realizing the fact that Enel is dead, they immediately knelt down to a stronger person.

The divine maidens created a snow-white dining table with cloud and served various delicacies and wines.

Only then did Luffy start to enjoy them.

Not long after, two men and a woman walked in from outside the door.

When Robin and the other two successfully entered the temple, they were instantly stunned by the scene before them.

"Luffy?"

"You guys are here, Are you hungry? It's dinner time. But the taste is not as good as what Sanji makes."

Luffy looked at the three of them.

Sanji was covered in injuries, supported by Zoro, while Robin seemed to be fine.

The three of them sat at the table one after another. They hadn't eaten anything all day and were starving.

"How do you feel?" Luffy smiled and asked Sanji.

"The priest's fighting ability is indeed strong. It's manageable in a one-on-

one situation, but in a two-on-one situation... I'm glad I have mastered the Tempest Kick," Sanji shook his head.

He felt a sense of urgency. This guy with the moss hair head dealt with two people very easily. Because he had learned Observation Haki, he was not at a disadvantage even against the priest's mantra.

In comparison, his kicking technique couldn't hit anyone when dealing with two people attacking him. They all dodged it.

If it wasn't for the final move, the Tempest Kick, he would have been defeated by those two.

"Luffy, why do those priests call Observation Haki 'Mantra'?"

"Maybe because it sounds good? Haki is a relatively rare power in the first half of the Grand Line. They probably don't know that the ability they have mastered is actually called Observation Haki," Luffy casually replied.

At this moment, Robin took out a notebook from her bag and handed it to Luffy.

"This is a record I found in the ruins of Shandora. It's written in ancient text."

She continued, "According to the text, Shandora was destroyed in order to protect the true history. In the center of the four altars, there is a Great Bell Tower, also known as the Golden Bell, where the true contents are recorded."

She sighed, propping her chin with one hand, staring straight at Luffy with a faint smile.

"I couldn't find it. I searched through the ruins, but I couldn't find the Great Bell Tower. Captain Luffy, can you tell me?"

As she spoke, she took off her high heels and quietly stretched her legs, lightly rubbing against Luffy.

A small action completely hidden under the table.

Luffy reached out and grabbed her foot, giving her a tickling massage on the sole of her foot.

"Do I still need to tell you? You can definitely guess where it is," Luffy said.

Robin, unable to tease him, was instead teased. Her expression couldn't hide how itchy she felt.

Want to pull back, but being firmly held. She could only grit her teeth and endure.

"Is... is it above this temple? At the top of the beanstalk?"

"Yeah," Luffy nodded.

Sensing the subtlety in her tone, Sanji asked in confusion, "What's wrong, Miss Robin?"

"Nothing!" Robin exerted force and finally pulled her foot back.

Luffy turned the tables and immediately laughed, "I'll take you up later."

[You dared to tease me without consequences, and you even eavesdropped and peeked when I was intimate with Vivi. Such a naughty woman]

Zoro drank heavily and ate heartily, while Sanji pretended not to notice.

Therefore, only the two of them knew about their little actions.

Soon, under the guidance of the guards, Nami and the others arrived outside the temple.

Luffy had the guards bring them in.

Upon seeing Luffy and the others, Nami was instantly stunned.

"Where is the God? Why are you here, Luffy?"

"If you're talking about the god, he's over there, already taken care of.

Have you found the gold after waiting for half a day?"

Nami gave him a disdainful look and walked over.

She picked up a glass of wine and drank it heartily.

"I seriously thought about it, Luffy, you already knew, didn't you? Yet you still made me search"

[Damn it, I really want to bite you.

(*^.....^*)]

The others also came over one after another and sat at the table to eat.

Knowing that they would come, Luffy specifically had the angels prepare a large table big enough for everyone to sit.

"Didn't you all have a great time?"

Luffy couldn't help but laugh.

"Indeed, I bought a lot of things, but I spent a lot of money." Nami picked up a few shopping bags from Valentine and said, "I bought you new clothes. You suddenly grew taller, and your old clothes don't fit anymore."

Upon hearing this, Luffy was slightly taken aback.

A woman who would buy him clothes, and could think of this, she was the second one, almost making him sentimental.

He couldn't help but feel grateful in his heart. It wasn't in vain to care for this girl.

"Thanks, Nami. I'll take you to find the gold later."

Nami showed a happy expression and handed the shopping bags to Valentine, then sat down next to Luffy.

After everyone finished dinner, Luffy took Robin and found the golden bell.

The historical text that had existed for 800 years was embedded in the base of the bell tower and had been abandoned for 400 years. No one took care of it, and now it was covered in moss.

Robin walked up to the historical text and touched the words on it.

"Poseidon, the Ancient Weapon with the name of a god..."

She murmured softly, and after reading the entire content, she sighed regretfully, "This historical text records the location of another ancient instrument. It's not what I wanted to know."

Pluton from Alabasta, according to what Crocodile said, was a battleship that could destroy an entire island with a single shot.

And there were still weapons like this...

Such a dangerous thing is now sleeping somewhere in the world.

Is this the reason she is being hunted by the government?

With an unsettled mind, Robin slowly turned around and, under the moonlight, she looked at Luffy with her dark eyes.

"The specific location is written on it, Luffy. Do you want to know?"

"The Fish-Men Island."

"Huh?"

Robin was immediately stunned.

After being in a daze for a while, she frowned and whispered, "Although I find it unlikely, Luffy, can you actually understand it?"

"I just happen to know, that's all. Are you worried that I will awaken the Ancient Weapon and bring disaster to this world?"

Luffy chuckled and shook his head, "Do you think this world is reasonable right now?"

Without waiting for Robin's answer, he walked to the right side of the main text of history and pointed to another piece of text engraved on a golden frame in the corner.

Robin noticed his action and followed his gaze, immediately showing a surprised expression.

"I came here and led this text to its final destination, the Pirate King, Gol D. Roger!"

A message from the Pirate King?

Why would it appear here?

Robin had too many doubts.

"Luffy, about 800 years ago, the Void Century, you must know something, right? Can you tell me?"

"Do you like second-hand information?" "Are you in a hurry?"

Robin stared blankly at the other person.

Luffy smiled and said, "I know a little, but not much. Why rush, Robin?"

On my ship, you are safe, no one can threaten your life. Keep up with me and see the truth of history with your own eyes. Isn't that your dream?"

After speaking, he turned and left.

"What are you still standing there for? Keep up, or do you want to go down by yourself?"

"Yes, Luffy!"

Robin smiled slightly and followed him with a jog.

[hm~ you are making me more and more curious, my reliable captain~]

The next day.

Gan Fall came to report that he had found Enel's shipbuilding base.

At the same time, he also found the 650 former subordinates.

These people were captured by Enel and forced to labor for the past six years to build his ships.

Luffy, along with the Straw Hat crew, followed Gan Fall and arrived at a cave.

The entrance of the cave was large, with a white cloth hanging in front with the word "God" written on it.

The group entered the cave and walked through a distance, arriving at an open space.

A huge and uniquely shaped ship was lying there quietly.

"Ark Maxim"

Gan Fall explained, "According to the shipbuilders, Enel named this ship the Ark Proverbs."

"What a big ship..." Nami exclaimed, her eyes shining. "So much gold!"

The hull of the ship is made of wood, but it is embedded with a lot of gold, used as a conductor.

"But it's so ugly!" she continued. "Luffy, do you really want to use this ship?"

"The Merry Go is too small, and the size of the keel also determines that it cannot be transformed into a larger ship. Isn't this ship good? It can fly," Luffy said.

Speaking of which, Luffy asked Gan Fall, "Is it finished?"

"It will take one more day, just the final decoration left."

"Then please..."

"Wait a minute! Can we make some changes? That huge 'God' character is ugly, and the control device on the front is also ugly. How much gold has been wasted? It has no aesthetic appeal! At least paint our Straw Hat Pirates flag on it," Nami firmly suggested.

Everyone looked at Luffy, waiting for the captain's decision.

"If we want to make changes, we might as well go to Water 7... They have the world's best shipyard."

"Since you say so, then let's listen to you. But at least change that 'God' character to the pirate flag. Don't you think it's ugly, Luffy?" Nami asked.

After hearing Nami's words, Luffy had to admit that it did look a bit ugly.

The others also nodded, praising Nami's suggestion.

"Then let's make the changes. How long will it take?"

"Three days," Gan Fall replied.

"Then we'll wait for three days. Nami, Vivi, come with me. As for the

others, you can go back to the Sunny. Zoro, bring the Merry go to the beach."

"Understood!"

Afterwards, Luffy, Vivi, and Nami returned to the temple.

"Did you leave us behind on purpose, Mr. Luffy? Is there something important?" Vivi glanced at Nami quietly, feeling uneasy.

[Could it be that he wants to confess our relationship to Miss Nami?]

[She not mentally prepared for it.]

[Would Miss Nami get angry?]

Nami smiled and asked, "Luffy, what's the matter?"

"Take these two Devil Fruits," Luffy said, taking out the Rain Fruit and the Thunder Fruit, and explaining them.

After listening, both women showed shocked expressions. (□o□)

"A Logia Devil Fruit, this is a very rare thing, right?" Nami murmured, looking at the Thunder Fruit in her hands, her face somewhat dazed.

"The Rain Fruit..."

Vivi was moved to the point of tears. This fruit was worth more than billions and trillions to Alabasta. (□ō□ō)

Such a rare thing, Mr. Luffy must have paid a great price to obtain it, right?

She was so moved that she threw herself into Luffy's arms, even forgetting that Nami was right beside her.

"Thank you, Mr. Luffy."

Nami fell silent.

Although she had suspected it before, she hadn't paid much attention to it.

Now, seeing Luffy take out two rare Logia fruits and give them to her and Vivi, she understood.

She recalled what her sister, Nojiko, had said back on Little Garden.

[Take good care of your man.]

She sighed silently in her heart. Upon careful consideration, she realized that she was just a woman born in a small village, while Vivi was a princess and Luffy came from a family with deep background.

"Nami," Luffy ruffled Vivi's hair and spoke, "Its too late now, Even if you want to run away, I won't let you."

Upon hearing these words, Vivi, who was immersed in her emotions, suddenly snapped back to reality.

Her face turned pale, she broke free from Luffy's embrace, and turned to Nami, stuttering:

"I-I'm sorry, Miss Nami, it was my fault! That day, I..."

"It's okay."

Nami took Vivi's hand and smiled, saying, "Daughters of the sea don't care about such things."

Saying that, she looked at Luffy again, pouting in dissatisfaction.

[Damn guy, you're really popular with women!]

[How long have you known Vivi, about a month and a half?]

[Hmm, it seems like it's been about the same amount of time for me too.]

"Nami don't be angry."

Luffy smiled shamelessly and reached out to embrace the two women: "I like both of you very much, so don't even think of escaping."

In order to prepare for this matter, he spent a whopping 9800 adventure coins!

Vivi didn't resist his actions at all, and even felt a little happy, but Nami struggled a bit and eventually allowed herself to be held.

"Luffy, I've decided to ignore you for three days!" Nami huffed and said,

"Vivi, you should do the same, don't let him get in bed with you!"

"Huh?!"

Vivi's face turned red. Nami, Miss Nami, really knows how to say bold things.

Afterwards, Nami broke free from the embrace and ran off with Vivi.

She said she wouldn't talk to him for three days, but she came back that same night.

Forcibly pulling Vivi along.

According to Nami's theory, the best way to keep her man from thinking too much is to dry him up.

Naturally, Luffy couldn't tolerate this provocation and decided to punish the two of them severely.

...

Three days later.

The Ark Maxim was completely built, and a huge Straw Hat Pirate flag was painted on the side of the ship.

Nami, who had eaten the Thunder Fruit, activated this enormous vessel.

However, since she had just eaten the fruit, her ability development was still lacking compared to Enel's.

But sailing the ship was not a problem.

The enormous Ark Maxim sailed out from the top of the mountain cave and arrived at the uppermost area of Skypiea.

Standing at the highest point, they looked out over the entire Sky Island and the Blue Sea below.

Luffy punched the golden bell.

Dong——!

The heavy sound of the bell spread in all directions, echoing through the sky, and finally reaching the Blue Sea, reaching Jaya Island.

Notes

(see extra chapter for Nami and Vivi's punishment) The mark on the ark max is a Japanese character, I don't know what that is

Chapter 86 R18: Extra can be skipped

According to Nami's theory, the best way to keep her man from thinking too much is to dry him up.

Naturally, Luffy couldn't tolerate this provocation and decided to punish the two of them severely.

Luffy took the hands of two beauties and walked towards the room.

When he came to the bed, Luffy pushed Nami down on the bed. He eagerly grabbed her soft and tender milky breasts with his hands and rubbed them. He opened his mouth and greedily took her beautiful pink nipples into his mouth and sucked them. The white and milky breast flesh slowly filled with tooth mark, and the trembling red and pink nipples were sucked hard making them erect. They stand upright on the big breasts and tremble slightly. Luffy continued to suck and ravage Nami all over the body. Nami's beautiful eyes are slightly closed, and the body trembles continuously. Letting out soft moans continuously, the young plum body exuding a light body fragrance and the frankincense of the plump breasts intoxicating Luffy.

"Mr. Luffy~..."

Vivi on the side suddenly called him, and Luffy looked at her with a smile, "What? Can't wait?"

Vivi was extremely shy hearing his words, and her already rosy face became even redder: "no...no~"

Luffy moved his head and looked at the Nami. Her beautiful eyes were slightly closed now, and she was panting repeatedly. Luffy moved his hands and gently touched between Nami's thighs, and the crotch was

already soaked wet.

"un~... Luffy..."

Nami felt his big hands on her crotch, and couldn't help but clamp her legs. Luffy chuckled and said to Vivi, who was lying aside and watching him and Nami: "Vivi, your Captain and Navigator will put on a good show for you later, you have to watch carefully."

Vivi nodded shyly. Although she had been fucked by Luffy, she was still shy after seeing such and erotic scene.

Luffy took out his hand from between Nami's thighs, and his naked body appeared in front of Nami and Vivi. His Cannon was already raised high, and the shaft was dark red. It was not only long, but also strong. Vivi was stunned by his big Cannon, which was bigger than before. She looked at it in horror, not daring to imagine if it can fit inside her?

Luffy ignored Vivi's surprised look, turned over and lay on Nami's body, holding the big, soft, elastic and warm breast, he pressed his crotch tightly against her. Moving his crotch back and forth slowly Luffy kissed Nami's lips, and gently caressed her big breasts with both hands.

Nami hugged him tightly, endured his teasing, trying to endure the pleasure spreading throughout her body. But the heat on her crotch still made her feel itchy and unbearable. She moved her waist slightly to alleviate the uncomfortable feeling. But the more she moved, the more itchy she felt. Now she just wanted to let Luffy's big Cannon to invade her opening and stop the itching.

"Captain Luffy ... um... give it to me... Luffy... un..."

Nami spread her round legs and wrapped them around his waist. Her slippery waist moving up and down, hoping that he would satisfy her immediately.

Luffy leaned over and said affectionately into Nami's ear: "My dear

Navigator, your Captain is here."

Pressing his body forward, the thick and long dick was submerged into Nami's opening. The head was swallowed up by the hot and humid vagina. As the hard dick moved deeper and deeper, Luffy slowly experienced the pleasure of being forcefully squished by the slippery and tight vagina. His hands touched Nami's plump breasts, his elongated lips licking back and forth on Nami's cheeks and lips, and his hands kneaded the milky-white and warm breasts...

The white plump flesh turning pink and crimson, forming various shapes. His hands kneaded them vigorously. Nami responded to him coquettishly. Nami's breasts were plump, and the areolas were pink and creamy.

"Oh... Um... Hmm..." Nami moaned with itch.

"Pinch it hard...knead it hard..." By moving up and down harder, Luffy increased the intensity of ravaging her breasts. The stimulation from her breasts made Nami spit out lustful moans from her seductive mouth. The orange, shiny and neat sparse forest is covered with fluid and clings to the slippery labia in disorder. As Nami moves up and down, from time to time, juices shining with light can be seen flowing out of her cunt.

Making constant wet sound against Luffy's crotch.

A hot body suddenly pressed against Luffy's body from the side, and at the same time, Vivi's soft and shy voice also sounded in his ears: "Mr. Luffy, I feel so hot and itchy..."

Only then did Nami remember that Vivi was still there, and Vivi had seen her horny look just now. Thinking of this, she pressed her head into Luffy's arms, pinched him, and protested to Luffy for making her look embarrassed in front of Vivi. .

Luffy turned around and saw that at some point, Vivi, who had been

forgotten by them, had also taken off her clothes. She looked at him with mist filled eyes, She bit her lower lip lightly with her teeth, looking like she couldn't bear the passion. Small and straight nose, pink and delicate skin, slim and graceful figure, bulging forward and backward, plump where it should be, and slim where it should be slim. Long eyelashes, small nose, slightly open mouth, rosy cheeks, everything displaying her beauty fully. The skin on her petite shoulders was smooth and soft, and her petite but plump breasts were like delicious fruit waiting to be plucked. As she breathed, waves of breasts swayed. On the right areola, there are small and erect nipples, and the pink tip of the nipple turning bright red due to excitement, making it even more attractive. A slim waist, a flat belly, a small belly button, sparse blue forest, just enough to cover the beautiful pussy. The round and almost perfect legs, the raised little butt, everything is so stimulating.

Of course, the most desirable thing is the mysterious hole hidden between her legs. Perhaps noticing that his eyes were focused on her beautiful pussy, Vivi spread her legs with a blushing face, exposing her young and tempting pussy. The entrance was completely displayed in front of him: the pink clit is slightly raised, looking very cute like a little bun; the sparse forest was neatly and symmetrically distributed on both sides, and tightly closed pink labia's passed through it, bringing a sense of temptation to explore beneath. Seeing such an erotic scenery Luffy was extremely hot. Oh, these alluring pink petals, he is going crazy.

"Mr. Luffy, you are so bad, staring at people too much..."

With the young woman's greasy voice, two fragrant soft lips covered his mouth. The young woman's soft, greasy lips made Luffy immediately feel the fragrance in his mouth, the roots of his tongue, and his nose was filled with the young woman's body fragrance. Vivi's movements seemed

very jerky, and Luffy had to retract his hands from Nami's chest, hugged Vivi's head and kissed her passionately.

Luffy long, flexible and powerful tongue pried open her closed teeth and invaded her mouth. The feeling brought by the kiss was so warm and comfortable. Vivi only felt that her whole body slowly relaxing, and gradually became intoxicated with pleasure like a beautiful dream. Under Luffy's skillful and continuous hot and wet kisses, the little beauty Vivi's body gradually softened and her body and mind were intoxicated and blank.

"Ugh...Luffy... you are so hard... ah... you are pushing me to death... ah..." Nami clenched her teeth, closed her beautiful eyes, moaning endlessly. She moved her tempting body up and down almost crazily, and moved her hands to her chest, pinching her own nipples instead of Luffy who was distracted by Vivi.

Of course, Luffy was not completely submerged. His waist also cooperated with Nami's efforts to move upwards, allowing the big glans head to hit her tender cervix again and again, bringing her unparalleled pleasure.

Vivi, who was almost suffocating, had to push him away, gasping for air, and pushed her young but relatively plump breasts in front of him. When her pink strawberry appeared in front of Luffy, he opened his mouth and took one of her small breasts in his mouth, licking and sucking it. His two hands were not idle either. One hand covered Vivi's other breast that had not been taken care of, kneading and twisting it; the other hand grabbed her little buttocks touching and kneading.

Vivi, who was being attacked from above and below, held Luffy's head tightly with both hands, her face flushed and she moaned softly: "Well... Mr. Luffy... it feels so strange... Ah... don't bite... Um... hum... Mr. Luffy..."

...Um..."

The young woman's shy and timid demeanor makes people's blood boil and makes them unable to control themselves, while her greasy moans make people's blood boil and drive them crazy.

While Vivi was teased by Luffy making her moan lustfully, Nami was at the end of her rope, and the erotic moans kept escaping her mouth: "Ah... Luffy... Good Captain...um...move it fast..." ...Why haven't you cum yet...Ah...It's still so hard...Ah...It seems to be thicker...It's so swollen that I...ah...am going to be fucked senseless by you...Ah... .."

Accompanying her moans were the sounds of "puff...puff" and the "plop...pap" impact, plus his heavy breathing and Vivi's shy and greasy moans, forming a perfect symphony.

"Ah...I can't do it anymore...it's coming..."

As Nami moved deeply for the last time, his dick also pressed hard against her warm and moist flesh. She let out a long scream, and a warm liquid gushes out from her center. Nami collapsed on him, reaching a climax. Luffy, who was in an excited state, was still hard, and he pushed hard into her cervix.

Seeing Vivi's beautiful and delicious appearance, he really wanted to eat her in one bite. Just as Luffy was about to stand up and take out his dick, he felt the opening of Nami clamping tightly on him, not wanting him to come out. Luffy looked at Nami who was still breathing mischievously. She seemed to be aware of the situation in cunt. She was so embarrassed she just wanted to bury her head in his arms. Luffy kissed Nami's cheek and said softly: "Honey, don't worry, it's still early, I will fill you up later. Now just see your Captain and Vivi giving you a show."

Nami was even more embarrassed by what he said. She bit Luffy's chest hard and protested to him for letting her show such a shameful look in

front of Vivi and making fun of her. Luffy took out the dick from Nami's tight hole, causing her to moan again.

After the dick was pulled out of her hole, the feeling of emptiness made her itchy and uncomfortable. She glanced at Luffy resentfully and saw that Luffy was looking at her with a smile. After kissing Nami, Luffy moved to Vivi's side. Listening to her panting, smelling the faint fragrance emanating from her body, he reached out and caressed her tender skin.

Luffy hugged Vivi tightly, pressing her delicate body against his, enjoying her plump breasts pressed against his chest and feeling her warm body. When Vivi's hand held his head, Luffy smelled a flowery girly scent from her hand. The fragrance unique to Vivi. He kissed Vivi again, until she ran out of breath, they separated. A silver thread was placed between his and Vivi's mouths. Vivi stretched out her little tongue and licked her lips. It looked so cute and charming: "Vivi, you are so beautiful."

"Uuh~."

When Vivi heard his praise, she suddenly lost her strength and lying on him. Luffy turned over and pressed Jade under him. He was not in a hurry to invade her, but wanted to appreciate her a little more. Vivi was waiting for him to come. Looking at her pretty face with long eyelashes, a small nose, a slightly open mouth, and rosy cheeks. Everything shows her beauty.

Her pretty face turned red, but she did not lower her head to avoid Luffy's gaze. Instead, she raised her face boldly to meet her "Captain" with a naughty expression. Her cheeks were hot like fire, and her eyes seemed to be dripping with water, slightly opening her mouth to breathe. She's so tempting! Luffy succumbed and kissed her mouth again. This time, Vivi took the initiative in the passionate kiss. She hugged his

neck tightly, and her smooth tongue entangled with his tongue passionately.

Luffy hands caressed her smooth and silky waist back and forth, his hands pinched her buttocks and went into her breasts, holding her soft and warm breasts. Luffy's hands kept pinching her breasts, and his fingers kept teasing her delicate nipples. Vivi panted, her eyes were scattered and misty, her arms were softly placed on his waist, her plump body was as soft as boneless, and her big breasts were full of elasticity that felt great. Under Luffy's caress, her nipples slowly rose up, a moan escaping softly from her nose. Luffy caressed her tender buttocks. Her tender buttocks were round without fat and felt excellent to the touch. Caress the curvy butt cheeks. Vivi moans "Ah" and twists her body: "Don't... it's so embarrassing... ah..."

Luffy gave her an aggressive kiss and blocked her small mouth of protest. The fingers reluctantly withdrew from her tender buttocks, and sank into her soft bottom. His fingers continued to explore downwards and encountered a slimy patch. The cunt had already become wet under his teasing.

Luffy hugged her, kissed her pretty face, opened his mouth to hold her earlobe, slurping it gently, and stretched out his tongue to gently lick the shell of her ear.

"Um..."

Vivi snorted, her pretty face flushed, her teeth bit lightly, her lips were slightly opened, her expression seemed shy and happy, her big watery eyes glanced lovingly at Luffy and then closed them shyly. She held Luffy's shoulders with both hands and tilted her head back slightly, pushing her beautifully shaped breasts higher, allowing Luffy to move more freely under his hands. Seeing Vivi being so considerate, Luffy's

desire rose sharply, and he bit down on those big chewy breasts.

"ah..."

Vivi let out a soft cry, hugged Luffy's head with both hands and pressed it to her chest, her body trembling involuntarily. Vivi's reaction made Luffy more excited. He took the top bulge of her right breast in his mouth, and grabbed her left breast with his right hand and kneaded it vigorously.

Vivi's soft body trembled violently, but she had no intention of stopping or struggling. On the contrary, her hands pressed Luffy's head harder towards her breasts, and at the same time, her breasts straightened up trying to move closer, and faint moans slipped out of Vivi's fiery lips:

"Hmm... hum..."

Vivi was numbed by Luffy flirting techniques, her eyes were misty, her red lips were slightly parted, she moaned and gasped, her whole body was hot, numb and itchy, she was so horny and uncomfortable that she quickly grabbed Luffy hands said: "Mr. Luffy...come quickly...I am so itchy because of you..."

"My lovely Vivi, where are you feeling itchy?"

Luffy continued to move his hands

"I'm... I'm so embarrassed... I'm embarrassed to say it... you know..Mr. Luffy... you're teasing me on purpose..."

"If you don't tell me, how will I know? My dear."

"You are so evil...I am so itchy because of you...I want you to...give it to me..."

Vivi was too shy to speak any more.

Luffy knew that the Vivi in front of him had been teased unbearably by his constant movements. So he pushed Vivi down on the bed, bringing her plump buttocks close to the edge of the bed. He held her plump thighs with both hands and spread them to both sides. He stood between

her legs, like an old man pushing a cart, and exerted force on his waist.

With a wet "puchi" sound, all the roots were submerged.

"How does it feel?"

Luffy sucked her beautiful nipples, groped her smooth thighs, and asked her with a smile. Under Luffy's sucking, groping and the friction on her labia, Vivi's lust, which was slightly suppressed by the pain, increased again. She moaned coquettishly, gushing out juices flowing to the base of her white legs.

Luffy began to pump slowly. She gasped and moaned: "Mmm... mmm... my whole body is filled with you... mmm." Luffy gradually increased the intensity and thrust regularly, nine shallow and one deep. Pumping. Soon Vivi's pain was drowned by the rising tide of pleasure. She hugged Luffy tightly, her long aqua blue and silky hair falling on the pillow, her snow-white skin flushed like a rose, thin beads of sweat on the tip of her nose, and she moaned like she was dreaming:

"Hmm... um..." A shy and happy expression appeared on her face, "Ah... Mr. Luffy... you are so... bad... ah... ah..."

Vivi suddenly cried out. It turned out that Nami, who was watching the battle on the sidelines, moved on Vivi's chest unwilling to be left alone, and took her breasts with her hands, playing with them. This double pleasure naturally made Vivi more lewd and excited, and Luffy thrust in even more wildly, making the sounds of "pop...pop...pop" come one after another, loud and erotic.

Her eyes were as misty, and the tip of her nose was covered with fine sweat, which was transparent and sticky and dripping down her milky-white thighs. "Be gentle...please slow down...don't use too much force."

"Mr. Luffy...Captain Luffy..."

Her eyes were half-open and half-closed, with faint mist overflowing, and

her long and thick eyelashes flashing constantly. Her eyebrows were slightly wrinkled, but her face was full of joy and pleasure, her red lips looked bright and delicate. The rubbery hard dick ferociously attacked the pink and delicate hole turning it red. Vivi moaned in confusion, her fingers gripping his back tightly, and the plump breasts on her delicate body squeezed his chest as they bumped.

Luffy held up her smooth elastic buttocks with both hands, raised his butt high, and impacted the wet cunt. The dick felt her narrow cunt contracting and sucking , and Vivi's climax came.

The beautiful body began to tremble, and uncontrollable shivers were released one after another with strong pleasure in her body. She raised her white neck, her blue hair poured out like water, and her fingers dug into his muscles: "Don't stop... don't Stop...ah, here it comes...ah..."

Luffy's impact made Vivi twist her waist and sway her hips, rocking up and down, moaning obscenely, and the water flowed out as if there was no stopping, dripping from the butt groove to the bottom.

"aahhh~..."

Her screams were getting louder and louder, her juices flowing out more and more, her whole body was trembling, her misty eyes were half-opened and half-closed, her whole body was wet with sweat, her pink face was red and she looked seductive, especially her white and plump pink buttocks kept swaying upwards. Catering to Luffy's thrust.

"Vivi, are you okay?"

"Bad Mr. Luffy, you won't give up until people are ashamed~"

Luffy smiled slightly, gently took her breast into his mouth and said,

"Vivi, let's change positions"

"Mr. Luffy, what else do you want to do?" Vivi said softly.

" Kneel on the bed, lower your head, and lift your butt up."

"Ah~~?"

Although Vivi was embarrassed, she still took the right position as Luffy said. Luffy gently caressed her big pinkish-white buttocks and moved forward vigorously. Luffy used strength, which was different from the gentleness last time. He wanted to use his heat and strength, torture, and fuck Vivi up into the clouds~ Vivi was so intoxicated by the impact that she moaned softly. Luffy looked at her intoxicated look and thrusts harder.

"Ah~~It hurts~~" Vivi was unable to withstand Luffy's wave after wave of attacks, and lay down completely limp with pain and pleasure.

At this time, Luffy was full of excitement, his heart of pity was gone, and he ignored her moans. After more than a hundred thrusts like this, Luffy was filled with heat and sweating, and Vivi no longer cried out in pain, but moaned in relief and pleasure, feeling so happy like flying.

After a violent trembling Vivi climaxed again, her whole body was almost paralyzed between half-awake and half-drunk. Luffy resisted the more exciting desire, lowered his head, gently stirred her lips with the tip of his tongue, and kissed her with his lips, he sucked her tongue into his mouth and slowly scraped it. Luffy's hands held her plump breasts again, squeezing them hardly...

Luffy pumped hard, pushing the dick deeply into the depths of her wet cunt, sending her to the top of pleasure. Vivi's trembling body softened, and the hand that was hugging him softly rested on his body. Vivi closed her eyes and slowly calmed her breathing. Her small hands gently touched his chest muscles, her body squirmed weakly, and she was full of tenderness towards Luffy.

"Mr. Luffy, it's so wonderful. I thought I was dead."

Hooked his neck and gave him a passionate kiss, her little face was full of

satisfaction and carefreeness after the passion, and the beautiful Princess was filled with charming blush. "You should take a rest first, Captain and Nami will continue next, and then I will love you again, okay?"

Luffy lowered his head and kissed Vivi's small mouth, and asked softly. Luffy smiled and withdrew from her body. Vivi's eyes looked at his still erect dick with some confusion. Luffy said in a funny way: "Little princess, don't be greedy. The pirate king will make sure to feed you well."

"Vivi was so embarrassed when she heard this, her face was so red almost dripping with water.

"Wao Vivi, you know how to be shy?"

While Nami was teasing Vivi, she pulled Luffy onto her body. She had already been amused by his and Vivi's live performance, and she couldn't wait to grab Luffy's dick and lead him to her wet hole. However, Luffy deliberately teased and refused to cooperate. She was so anxious that she said coquettishly: "My good Captain, my reliable Captain, stop teasing me. You have to love me more."

Before Luffy could say anything, Vivi beside him burst into laughter, making Nami's face turn red, and scold her angrily: "Damn Vivi, you laughing at me when you are full."

"Hey, don't be angry nami. I'm here, I will move right now"

Luffy hugged Nami's waist and pushed hard, and the dick smoothly entered her cunt squeezing out some juice wetting the sheets. The full pleasure made Nami scream with joy, and then she gazed at him with a bright smile: "My dear Captain, don't stop you have to satisfy your Nami.

"As you command, my lovely Navigator, here I come"

With the more experienced Nami, there is no need to hold back now.

Luffy lifted Nami's legs and put them on his shoulders. He held her thighs

with both hands. He took a deep breath and began to thrust hard with force, without giving her any chance to stabilize.

Nami, who had been violently attacked, immediately felt happy her mind going blank and talking gibberish: "Ah... my bad boy... my dear Captain... you are going to kill your Navigator... ah... great... ...Ah...come again...ah...be stronger...fuck me more...fuck Nami...I am willing...ah...I want to fly..."

"Hehe, I am such a good Captain, ofcourse I will satisfy you, my dear " Vivi, who had regained her composure, did not dare to be lonely and joined their fight. She also played with the plump breasts on Nami's chest, and from time to time pinched her nipples. Nami's erect nipples were pinched lightly, which made Nami itch. She gasped and moaned: "Damn...you...Vivi...why...are you teasing...me...is... ...Don't pinch...my ...I won't be able to bear it anymore..."

"Hehe, Miss Nami, you teased me just now. Of course I have to take revenge now."

Vivi smiled coquettishly, gently pinching Nami's upright Nipples with her fingers. The double stimulation from her nipples and from her cunt made Nami go crazy. She didn't care to argue with Vivi anymore, and kept moaning. Her head swung sharply, and her waist twisted even more. Luffy was sweating heavily, thrusting violently, causing the bed under him to creak.

"Ah...you...Vivi...stop pinching...ah...I can't bear it...ah...ah...here it comes...aaahh..."

Nami yelled, and her whole body suddenly collapsed like a deflated rubber ball. Her mouth was wide open and she was panting. Under the dual attack of Luffy and Vivi, she could barely last more than Vivi, gushing a wave of vaginal semen. Feeling the sudden flow of the warm

juice and sucking from Nami's hole Luffy, who was excited pushed even harder entering her tight womb and with a "puff" he shot waves upon waves of semen inside her womb. Seeing Nami's deflated look Luffy had to change his target and entered Vivi's delicate cunt again.

"Ahhh... Mr. Luffy...ah...you...are stronger than before...ah...thicker...ahhh...are pushing against my...love...ah...so wonderful." ...It feels so good...I love you...Mr. Luffy...Vivi loves you."

"Good Vivi, I love you too."

Feeling the deep love of the young woman under him, Luffy was very happy, and his waist moved even more intensely, as if he wanted to merge the two bodies into one.

"Mr. Luffy... if it gets harder... I... I'm going to die... ah... I'm going to go fly... ah..."

Vivi hooked his neck and kissed Luffy's face crazily; a pair of beautiful legs tightly wrapped around his waist, moving wildly to cater to him, and they cooperated with Luffy in perfect harmony.

"Huh... Vivi... I am coming...take it all"

The intense pleasure continued to hit him, with more than hundreds of rapid thrusting Luffy decided his second climax, and rushed his final sprint. Vivi's delicate body twisted even faster, and she moaned: "Mr. Luffy... I want to... together..." coming..."

Her cunt contracted, squeezing his big dick violently and a wave of vaginal fluid flowed hitting Luffy's glan. The intense pleasure made Luffy let go. The glans head hit the center of the cervix hard entering her womb, Luffy whole body trembled and his spine froze, "Pfft... ...Puff... Pfft..." Luffy released his hot semen.

"Mr. Luffy...you are too fierce..."

Vivi moaned and called Nami at the same time: "Miss Nami, come and

save me~" Nami could only turn over from the feeling of exhaustion and throw herself on Luffy's body, two plump balls of flesh pressed against Luffy's chest. , she lowered her head and used the tip of her tongue, starting from Luffy's neck and slowly moving downwards, her two plump balls also moved downwards. After Vivi's violent release, Nami quickly took over Luffy's burning dick. She stood up and sat on Luffy's body, then squatted down with her weight. "Puff.."

Luffy felt extremely wonderful, feeling the sudden squeezing. He thrusts upwards, up down, up down. "plop...plop...plop.."constantly thrusting in and out of the tender meat hole.

After several fierce battles, he felt a stream of heat eager to rush out, so his whole body was like a machine at full power, rushing wildly against the soft Nami, who fell on the bed weakly, moaning louder and louder:

"Luffy... I can't do it anymore, it's here again... I'm dying...

hiing...uuuhh... Aahh..."

Nami moaned and moved hard up and down. After a moment, she suddenly felt a shudder, and a stream of hot vaginal juice spurted out.

She took a long breath and let out a long sigh: "Ah... I..." It's so wonderful..." Then her whole body fell on Luffy's body.

An unparalleled pleasure filled Luffy's whole body, and Luffy suddenly felt numb all over. Grabbing Nami's elastic buttocks he pushed hard into the tender womb, the hot semen erupted like a volcano, forcefully expanding her uterus, ejaculating again and again. Nami's whole body was trembling violently, and Luffy was also in a state of elation. He hugged Nami comfortably and held Vivi in his other hand, keeping them close to his body. The three of them hugged together and fell asleep.

Chapter 87 The Prologue Of The
Summit War

Dong...

Dong!

The first bell sound resonated, filling the air, as the second bell sound followed swiftly.

The Ark's Maxim.

Nami and Vivi stood at the edge, watching Luffy ringing the bell, both showing puzzled expressions.

"Luffy? What are you doing?"

"Telling Cricket Guy that Sky Island is real. The sound of this bell can reach the island of Jaya, ten thousand meters below."

Luffy answered loudly while throwing another punch.

Dong——!

The third bell sound rang.

Up close, the sound of the Golden Bell was very heavy, forcing Vivi to close her ears.

"How many times do we need to ring it?"

"Sixteen times. The first eight times symbolize the end of the old year, the end of the past; the next eight times symbolize the arrival of the new year, welcoming the future."

"Oh, I see." Vivi nodded understandingly and smiled. "Do you need any help?"

Nami, on the other hand, had a different focus. She blinked her eyes and stared at the Golden Bell, cunningly saying, "Luffy, take a closer look.

This bell is made of gold. Can we take it?"

"Nami! Are you a devil? It has been guarded by the Shandorans for 800 years. It would be too cruel to take it away, especially when we already have a ship full of gold."

Luffy's face was full of helplessness.

To say it's "a little" is not quite right. The Golden Bell, including the large bell tower outside, is made of at least several hundred tons of gold.

It's just that compared to the gold used by the Ark's Proverb, it is indeed "a little."

"But aren't they already dead?"

"Who told you they're dead? They're alive and well."

"Huh?! They're still alive?"

Nami was startled.

In the clouds of this divine island, there is a little-known village called Hidden Cloud Village.

Descendants of Shandora, they all live there.

"They're here."

Luffy grinned, using his Observation Haki to sense the numerous auras appearing on the island, rapidly approaching this way.

Boom!

One after another, the sound of bells continuously rang out.

In the forest, a group of warriors dressed like Native Americans, wearing special power shoes, swiftly shuttled through the woods.

They heard the sound of bells, their faces filled with indescribable excitement.

"Do you hear that? Wyper! It's the sound of the Great Bell Tower!"

"I hear it! The sound that hasn't been heard in 400 years, Kamakiri, hurry, it's in the direction of the Beanstalk!"

They raced forward, and every so often, they could hear the tolling of a bell.

A total of sixteen times!

When they arrived beneath the Beanstalk, the crowd saw a man standing next to the Golden Belfry Bell.

Above the man's head was an incredibly huge flying ship.

The side of the ship was painted with a pirate flag.

"You..."

Before they could speak, Luffy spoke first.

Hey "This is your Shandorian Golden Belfry Bell. 400 years ago, it came to the sky along with this island, and the Golden Bell fell to the top of the Beanstalk. I helped you take it down, no need to thank me. As compensation, I will ne taking all the remaining gold of the Golden City of Shandora."

A fair and just trade.

"Who are you?" The man named Wyper couldn't believe his ears.

"The Sun God, Monkey D. Luffy. I've returned your things, so I'll take my leave now, descendants of Shandora."

With a smile, Luffy lightly leaped onto the Ark Maxim.

Wyper shouted, "Wait... what exactly happened? I felt something strange on the way here. Where are the priests? Where is God Enel?"

Just then, a Pegasus flew down from the sky, with Gan Fall riding it, shouting, "Luffy-sama, have you made your decision?"

"Luffy-sama!" Wyper widened his eyes, as if he had seen an enemy.

Luffy waved his hand and said, "Goodbye, Gan Fall. This group of people still doesn't know anything, so you tell them. You and your group have been fighting for 400 years, it's time you guys take a break. Nami, let's go."

The Ark Maxim slowly rose in height and headed towards Angel Beach.

"Goodbye, Sun God, I wish you smooth sailing!"

Gan Fall made a Sky Island farewell gesture before jumping down from his heavenly horse.

"Let me tell you about what happened three days ago..."

Angel Beach.

When the Ark Maxim flew over Angel Island and arrived above the beach, all the Sky Islanders were shaken.

The news of Enel's death had already spread throughout the island three days ago.

Everyone clapped and danced with joy.

"Sun God, Luffy!"

Someone shouted Luffy's name and waved continuously towards the Ship in the sky.

Nami stood by the ship, supporting her chin and smiling.

"A few days ago, when we were strolling on Lovely Street, whenever the gods were mentioned, the people here would show a fearful expression... But today, they voluntarily called you the Sun God."

Vivi exclaimed and stared below, saying, "It's Usopp and the others."

On Lovely Street, the three of them saw Usopp and Chopper.

While they were waiting in the temple for the ark to be completed, the others had been enjoying themselves on this Angel Island for a few days.

"Luffy!!" Usopp waved and greeted continuously.

"We're about to set sail, Usopp, do you want to stay behind?" Nami said with a smile.

"You bastard, don't even think about leaving me behind like in Logue Town! Hurry up and pull me up, Luffy!"

"And me too, Luffy, let me on the ship!" Chopper also waved and called out.

"Hahaha, how can I leave you guys." Luffy waved his hand and pulled the two of them from the street onto the ship.

As soon as they got on the ship, the two of them were dazzled by a pile of gold.

"Wow! Gold!"

"New ship!"

The two immediately held hands and started dancing on the deck.

"Gold! Gold! Gold!"

♪ ♪ (□o□) ♪ ♪ ♪ (□o□) ♪ ♪ ♪ (□o□) ♪ ♪

"New ship! New ship! New ship!"

"You two idiots are so noisy!"

Nami walked over and punched the two hard. "Where are the others?"

"They... they are at the beach," Usopp said, holding his swollen head.

"Zoro and the others are training... Sanji is recovering..." Chopper replied tremblingly.

The two looked at each other, scared. Nami might have awakened her Haki, and getting punched by her really hurts.

Soon, the Ark Maxim arrived at Angel Beach.

"Luffy."

"Luffy-sama."

"Big brother Luffy!"

Everyone immediately gathered together and came over to greet him.

Seeing that the Ark Maxim could really fly, everyone couldn't help but be amazed.

A flying ship, everyone was seeing it for the first time!

And it was huge, more than ten times bigger than the Sunny.

"Get ready, we're about to set off," Nami said confidently. "The Log Pose is already pointing to the next island, it's time to say goodbye here."

"Wait, this ship can fly, what about the Sunny and the Merry?" Usopp opened his mouth wide. "Luffy, you're not going to abandon those two ships, are you?"

"How could I? Zoro, Sanji, and all of you, bring the Sunny and the Merry

on board. We'll first return to the waters near Water 7 and bring Laboon along, then head to the next island."

Luffy waved his big hand and gave the captain's order.

"Oh!"

Immediately, everyone started moving quickly.

Looking around, Luffy didn't see Bellamy's ship. It seemed that the group of pirates had already left ahead of them.

While they were busy, the people from the Middle Island also arrived at the beach.

Out of gratitude, many people sent some Sky Island specialties.

The White Beret Brigade, led by Captain McKinley, returned the over two million berries that were previously paid upon entry to Nami, as promised.

With the usual skypiea style, He waved his hand in greeting. "Thank you for everything you've done. We have learned everything from Gan Fall.

You are the liberators of Sky Island, the Sun God Luffy!"

The Straw Hat Crew imitated his gesture and bowed.

"We welcome you on your next visit. We will no longer charge you an entry fee," McKinley grinned. "Mr. Monkey D. Luffy, thank you once again."

Luffy waved his hand and said to his crew:

"Set sail, everyone!"

Jaya Island.

Eastern coast.

Apes and Chimpanzees gathered behind Cricket, their faces filled with astonishment as they looked at the sky.

"Boss, it's a round ship!"

"It's the shadow of a ship!"

Cricket smiled and looked up at the sky.

The shape of the huge ship projected on the clouds had a group of people standing side by side on its deck.

Even if it was just a silhouette, he could recognize each person from it.

Cricket focused his gaze on the person in the middle, the one wearing a straw hat.

"Monkey D. Luffy.... I have heard it! Thank you! For the news of Shandora, it really exists!"

With joy on his face, he closed the book in his hand, stood up, and said to the apes and chimpanzees, "So, next, I will pursue the next romance. Will you all come with me?"

"We will follow you for the rest of our lives, Boss!"

The Ark Maxim returned to the sea near Jaya Island from the white sea 10,000 meters above.

It took the crew an afternoon to find Laboon.

Fortunately, Laboon's size was large enough that it was easy to spot when it surfaced.

Afterwards, they followed the direction of the log pose and headed towards the next island.

As for the Going Merry and the Thousand Sunny, they were released and returned to the sea.

As the captain, Luffy reassigned the crew members to each ship.

Main ship, Sunny, the residents are all females, no need for changes for now, the space is still enough.

Second ship, Merry, captained by the first mate Zoro, the crew includes Sanji, Usopp, Chopper, Yosaku, and Johnny.

Third ship, Ark Maxim, temporarily captained by the second mate Bartolomeo, the crew includes the five male agents.

With the new ship, everyone is happy, no longer needing to squeeze into Merry.

On the contrary, it feels a bit empty.

After all, Ark Maxim is really big, although most of the internal areas of the ship were originally designed to install complex power structures.

But even so, there is still a large living space.

Seven days later.

[After sailing in the Sea of Paradise for 7 days, you will receive a reward of 70 Adventure Points.]

Ark Maxim, bow deck.

"This big ship requires a lot of maintenance. Luffy, we need professional shipwrights, and one or two people are not enough, at least five people, right?" Nami suggested.

"Five people?" Luffy fell into deep thought.

There are indeed many shipwrights in the Seven Water Metropolis, and Franky, the cyborg, is certainly a target, but maintaining three ships alone would obviously be difficult for him.

"Let's wait until we reach the Seven Water Metropolis and see. By the way, we also need to modify this ship," Luffy said.

After a pause, he continued, "We're about to reach the next island, and I plan to stay for a while and do a little experiment."

"Luffy, what kind of experiment?" Yosaku asked curiously.

"About improving your strength. As we go further into the Grand Line, the enemies we face will become stronger. I want you to have the strength to stand on your own as soon as possible."

"Training together?" Zoro grinned with interest.

With a light laugh, Luffy calmly said, "We will need Chopper's power.

We've made some progress in the past two days. Anyway, let's talk about

it when we get there."

Leaving a cliffhanger, Luffy walked to the bow of Ark Maxim and looked calmly into the distance.

In his field of vision, an island was already faintly visible.

"Hmm?"

Suddenly, he was slightly startled and took off the straw hat hanging around his neck, taking out a piece of paper from it.

Ace's Life Card.

At this moment, a corner of this paper has already started to burn.

"Injured?"

Luffy squinted slightly and thought to himself, "Did he encounter Blackbeard?"

"What's wrong, Luffy?" Robin walked over with a smile on her face.

"The era is about to go wild."

Luffy smiled faintly and put away the Life Card.

Naval Headquarters, Enies Lobby, and Impel Down, they are known as the three major institutions under the World Government.

At this moment, Impel Down.

Also known as The Underwater Prison

This is the world's number one prison, located in the Calm Belt.

As the name suggests, It is located underwater in the middle of the Calm Belt and part of the Tarai Current, completely separating the Grand Line from the Four Seas.

In a prison established in such a place, ordinary ships cannot reach unless they have the ability to fly.

Even if some merchant ships dare to enter, the Sea Kings that inhabit this sea area will cause huge trouble.

Of course, all of this is nothing to the Marines.

Among the three major institutions, there is a special triangular sea current, and each institution has a huge gate standing in front of it, the Gate of Justice.

On this day, a warship arrived and sent four prisoners into the prison through the Gate of Justice.

Under the push and shove of the prison guards, the four newcomers underwent the "baptism" before entering the prison.

There are no human rights here. The four people were stripped clean and pushed into a boiling hot pot at 100 degrees for the first round of disinfection.

Suddenly, screams filled the air.

Among them, the person who screamed the loudest had an ugly appearance and was missing seven or eight teeth.

The prison guards outside the hot pot immediately complained,

"Last time Crocodile came in, he didn't even frown. This guy screams worse than a dying pig!"

"I heard that he's a pirate caught by Admiral Aokiji, and the total bounty for the four of them is 0."

"Hahaha, new rookie pirates who have just set sail, huh? They're really unlucky to encounter Admiral Aokiji."

The prison guards burst into laughter.

Afterwards, the four individuals, who had undergone high-temperature disinfection, were sent to the interrogation room and subjected to a period of questioning.

Because they were not important figures, the interrogation did not waste much time. The guards simply stamped their registration books.

Finally, the four individuals were each sent to different prison cells.

Iv1 Crimson Hell!

"Teach, this is your prison cell, get in!" The guard kicked the toothless, ugly pirate inside.

Blackbeard fell to the ground, panting heavily.

"You bastard, I almost died. Who came up with the torture method of 100 degrees Celsius disinfection? Magellan?"

"Shut up and behave, Pirates have no human rights here. Newbie pirates like you will be taught a lesson by other prisoners. So don't make too much noise with your screams."

Spitting out a mouthful of saliva, the guard turned and walked away.

"Zehahahaha..."

Blackbeard grinned, wiping the saliva off his face. "Although it wasn't intentional, is this also fate?"

"You are... from Whitebeard's ship! The lazy bastard who doesn't sleep?!"

Suddenly, a scream came from behind.

Blackbeard froze, a flash of murder passing through his eyes.

After finally getting in here, how could his identity be exposed?

He squinted his eyes and turned around to look.

He saw a clown with a red nose staring at him in astonishment.

"You're that brat from Roger's ship, what's your name... Red Nose Buggy?"

"What?! Who are you calling Red Nose?"

Buggy became furious and headbutted Blackbeard's forehead. "Over twenty years ago, our Roger Pirates and your Whitebeard Pirates fought for three days and three nights. I haven't forgotten your face, you bastard!"

"Hahaha, meeting in a place like this, it's fate, Buggy. How about teaming up with me?"

"Team up? What do you mean..."

"Escape.."

Chapter 88 Gathering Practice.

[You have arrived at the new island, Long Ring Long Land, and received a reward of 1000 adventure coins.]

[Adventure Coins]: 3985

When the system prompt appeared, the Straw Hat Crew's fleet finally arrived at the new island.

Everyone came out onto the decks of their respective ships.

"A new island~"

"There's nothing here...?"

"Is this Spring Island? The climate around this island is so comfortable~"

In sight was an endless grassland, with the sea breeze blowing and the lush green grass dancing in the wind.

The Sunny and Merry ships anchored one after another, while the Thousand Sunny remained suspended in mid-air, only lowering its height slightly.

"Everyone, feel free to explore. We'll meet up later."

Luffy announced to everyone on the Thousand Sunny's deck with a smile.

"Yaho~" Usopp excitedly jumped off the ship.

Luffy shook his head and turned to Robin and the others, saying, "You guys should go down too. I'll go check on Chopper."

With that, he jumped off the Thousand Sunny and instantly arrived on the Merry.

This ship was small and didn't have much space. Its main structure consisted of two crew cabins, a lounge that doubled as a kitchen and helm, a storage and cannon deck, and a very small bathroom.

Though small, it had all the basic functions and was well-equipped.

Luffy lifted the hatch next to the mast and jumped down. This was the second crew cabin.

In the original story, this was the male crew cabin, while the first one was the female crew cabin next door, and it was much smaller, only half the size of this one.

"Chopper, how's the research on the medicine going?"

As soon as he arrived, Luffy saw Chopper sitting at the table, tinkering with a bunch of bottles and jars.

He was very focused and didn't hear the footsteps behind him at all.

Suddenly, a voice came, and Chopper was startled, almost dropping the glass tube in his hand.

"Luffy... You scared me."

He extended his paw to wipe the sweat off his forehead and let out a sigh of relief. "I've extracted the components from the fruit, but I don't know what the specific effects will be."

When they were on Jaya Island, Luffy gave Vivi a box of six-style Fruits.

Since Vivi already knew two styles, she only ate four fruits. He didn't know what to do with the remaining two fruits, so He handed them over to Chopper a week ago.

After eating the six-style Fruit, not only would one gain mastery over one style, but it also came with the function of strengthening the body.

For example, if one mastered "Finger Pistol" after eating the fruit, the enhancement would mainly be in the fingers. If it was "Tempest Kick," it would be in the legs. If it was "Iron Body," it would be in the muscles throughout the body. Once tightened, it would provide strong defense.

Each type of six-style enhancement had slightly different effects. But regardless of which one, the incredible effects would manifest in the body, effectively skipping the long training process.

So, with hope in mind, Luffy handed the two fruits to Chopper, who possessed advanced medical skills, hoping that he could figure out

something.

"Can you understand the principle?" Luffy walked up to Chopper and looked at the pile of glass bottles on the table.

"I don't understand. They are all ingredients I have never seen before. I'm sorry, Luffy. I wasted a portion of one of the fruits," Chopper apologized.

"What happened?" Luffy asked.

"I took a bite and mastered 'Finger Pistol,' then extracted the active ingredients from the remaining fruit, but the result was strange." Chopper took out two glass tubes and showed them to Luffy.

The liquid in the two tubes was both light green.

"The one on the left is No. 1, extracted from the fruit I took a bite of," Chopper explained. "The one on the right is No. 2, extracted from the intact fruit."

"The medicinal activity of the two substances is significantly different.

No. 2 is less than one percent of No. 1."

Upon hearing this, Luffy smiled and patted Chopper's head.

"No need to apologize. You did a great job, Doctor Chopper."

"Stupid....stupid idiot~ Even if you praise me, I won't be happy~"

He was so happy that he was shy and twisted his body in a strange way.

"Hahaha, so you're saying the essence is in the first bite?" Luffy asked with a laugh.

"You could say that, but I don't understand the reason behind it..."

Chopper was very frustrated. "Just like Devil Fruits, once you eat the first bite, the remaining parts lose their effect. The Six Styles Fruit is similar, but there will still be a very small residue."

The only person in the world who can understand this problem is the scientist who claims to surpass this world by 500 years, Vegapunk.

However, this problem is not that important.

Luffy pondered, "So if a portion of the liquid in Test Tube No. 2 is consumed, will the rest also lose its effect?"

"No," Chopper quickly shook his head. "I've already experimented with it. I gave a little to Karoo, and it only made his body stronger, but he couldn't master the Six Styles. Luffy, do you want to use this to train everyone? It does have a strong effect, but I don't know if there will be any side effects."

Fruits produced by the system, of course, won't have any side effects. Even Devil Fruits have no side effects, no longer fearing seawater or seastone.

Armament Haki still works. Luffy tested it on Nami and Vivi, and he could still grab their bodies.

Obviously, being hit by Armament Haki doesn't fall under the category of side effects.

Thinking of this, Luffy immediately took out a Lifespan Fruit.

"let's study this later"

"What is this?"

"A fruit that, when eaten, grants one year of lifespan and replenishes a lot of vitality to the consumer."

Chopper's mouth dropped open, and he said dumbfoundedly, "Luffy, you can bring out anything! What else is there? Is there a universal medicine that can cure all diseases?"

His eyes sparkled, and he looked up with anticipation.

Luffy laughed, and believe it or not, he actually had something similar.

The Self-Healing Fruit. When they were in East Blue, Zoro was almost killed by Hawkeye, but one Self-Healing Fruit made him completely fine.

Unfortunately, this kind of fruit doesn't have any effect on diseases.

If it's given to Chopper for research, maybe he can really fulfill his dream

and create a universal medicine.

He didn't forget the conditions Dr. Kureha mentioned back then.

"Now I don't have it, but once I find it, I'll give it to you to try. Chopper, can these two liquid medicines be taken orally directly?"

"Yes! But I suggest diluting it a bit. The quantity is small, it might not be enough for everyone."

"I will leave it to you!"

Soon, Chopper diluted the second liquid medicine and made over twenty cups of light green drink.

Luffy took him and walked out of the Merry Go, arriving at the Great Grassland of Long Ring Long Land.

"Luffy, Captain"

Mr. 3 quickly ran over and offered his own brewed black tea.

This underling has good vision, huh? Luffy smiled and picked up a cup of Earl Gray, taking a sip and saying, "Gather everyone."

"Understood~"

Mr. 3 immediately went to find people.

Bartolomeo, who happened to witness this scene, was taken aback.

[Damn it, he actually wants to compete with me for the position of his number one underling.]

He also quickly ran over and said, "Luffy-sama! Your loyal underling awaits your call!"

"Perfect, I need your strength." Luffy nodded and said, "Your barrier fruit ability, the defense is strong, right?"

"Yes! The world's strongest defense, an impenetrable fortress!"

Bartolomeo said confidently.

"Then come and assist everyone in their training."

"Huh?"

Soon, Mr. 3 called everyone back.

The Straw Hat Pirates were all present, except for Laboon, who could only stay in the sea.

"Luffy, what are you planning to do?" Nami asked.

"Today, let everyone try Chopper's latest research achievement, the Strengthening Water."

Upon hearing this, everyone looked at Chopper.

Chopper immediately said, "Listen to me, this is an effective ingredient extracted from the Six Styles fruit. After drinking it, it will quickly strengthen everyone's physical strength."

Luffy added, "Its effect doesn't happen instantly, it lasts for a period of time. So, during this time, you should quickly train. There should be a good feedback."

He didn't know to what extent it would reach, and neither did Chopper.

In any case, today is just a test. If the effect is good, it can be promoted.

"So that's why Chopper has been busy these past few days?" Usopp suddenly realized.

Both Mr. Five and Mr. Three were surprised.

They had heard a little about the Six Styles fruit.

They didn't expect that they would be involved too?

"Who wants to go first?" Luffy asked with a smile. "Nami, Vivi, you don't need to, you're already superhuman."

Naturally, the two women didn't mind.

Not only did they master all six styles, but they were also Logia users. If you really wanted to say it, their combat abilities were stronger than Zoro's.

"But Luffy, I have a question," Nami said in confusion. "In that case, can they still master the Six Styles?"

"Idiot, as long as their physical fitness meets the standard, it's not difficult to master the techniques. Look at me, I haven't eaten, but I can still master Shave, right?"

The Six Styles are not the goal, the strength of the body is the main.

Having more skills is not a problem, as they are the prerequisites for Haki anyway.

And if you really want to learn, it's not like you can't learn it. Most officers at the Naval Headquarters have mastered one or two moves.

"Yes, yes, yes! I'll go first!"

Usopp was the first to raise his hand, ran to Chopper, and picked up a cup of drink, gulping it down.

He let out a satisfied groan and extended the cup forward. "Another cup!"

"There's no more..." Chopper transformed into a shark mouth. "Just enough for each person."

"I'll give it a try too."

Sanji also came over and drank a cup, savoring it carefully. He said in surprise, "The taste is really good."

"Really? Let me try too."

Robin smiled and picked up a cup, elegantly taking a sip.

Soon, everyone joined in, including Zoro, who didn't hesitate and finished it in one gulp.

Finally, the members of the special agent group exchanged glances and silently stepped forward.

Opportunities to become stronger shouldn't be wasted, right?

After Miss Kaya finished her drink, Chopper immediately said, "Kaya, your body is weak. Drinking this is good for your illness, but you shouldn't participate in training now. Your body can't handle it. Just move around more."

"Yes, Teacher Chopper!"

Kaya nodded with a smile.

She wanted to learn medicine, so she asked Chopper to teach her medical skills a long time ago, hence the change in how she addressed him.

One by one, everyone drank the Strengthening Water.

Luffy announced, "Everyone, train in your own way. Of course, if you want some challenge, there's Little Barto's barrier."

Just as he was speaking, his voice suddenly stopped.

Zoro also narrowed his eyes, and both of them looked towards the sea.

In the distance on the sea surface, a huge pirate ship was heading straight towards them.

On the deck.

"Captain, it's the Straw Hat Pirates!" the pirate in charge of lookout exclaimed.

"Ah? The Straw Hat Pirates?"

The man with crossed arms suddenly widened his eyes. "They are truly one of the Shichibukai."

"Eh!? They're Shichibukai!"

His subordinates were all shocked.

"You fools, it's precisely because they're Shichibukai that we have to go!

Who do you think I am? If you want something, you have to snatch it!

This is the motto of 'Foxy' The Silver Fox"

The man who made the arrogant statement had a split hair, a red nose, an inverted eyebrow, and triangular eyes, resembling a fox.

"I'm sure the crew members of the Shichibukai must be strong, right?

Let's go!"

The crowd of henchmen had faces as dark as ink, and someone tried to grab the captain on the spot, but the ship continued to head towards

Long Ring Long Land.

By the coast, filled was a grassland.

Zoro grinned and said, "Oh... are they coming for us? Are they looking for a fight?"

As soon as they heard the word "fight," the men immediately smiled.

Sanji loosened the collar of his shirt and said, "Drink some water, it'll cool you down a bit. Don't worry, leave them to me!"

"No, Mr. Sanji," Mr. 3 pushed his glasses and shrugged with a light laugh, "Please leave them to me. Let me handle this pirate crew that popped out of nowhere. I am Mr. Galdino!"

"Leave it to me, I'll take care of it. It's been a while since I've moved," Mr. 2 said, jumping and performing a ballet dance in a fighting stance.

"Hahaha."

Luffy laughed and didn't stop them. He pulled over a chair, sat down calmly, and took on a spectator's posture.

Boom!

When Foxy's pirate ship reached the shore, they were greeted by a group of eager men.

On the deck, the Foxy Pirates nervously swallowed their saliva.

"Wait, wait!"

A woman with a cute appearance but a strange hat immediately waved her hand and spoke in a sweet voice, "We're not here to fight with you, Straw Hat Pirates. It's a misunderstanding!"

Sanji's beauty radar immediately activated upon seeing her, "Woman! A beauty~!"

"Shut up, you perverted Curly Brow" Zoro kicked the person down with one foot, trying to stop the embarrassment of their Straw Hat crew.

"You did it, you kicked me. It seems like you're ready to die, moss head"

Sanji stood up, and the two of them started fighting on the spot.

Foxy Pirates:

"Fefefefefefe!"

Suddenly, laughter rang out. Silver Fox Foxy pointed his finger at Luffy, who was sitting on the side watching the show, and shouted,

"Seven Warlords of the Sea, Straw Hat Luffy, I am Captain Foxy of the Foxy Pirates from West Blue. I am not here to fight you, on the contrary, I am here to challenge you!"

"A challenge?"

Everyone was surprised.

Does this person have a problem? Does he even know what a Shichibukai is?

Is he planning to take them down and steal the title of Shichibukai?

"Foxy the Silver Fox, I've heard of you, the trash with a bounty of 24 million," Mr. 3 said disdainfully. "Let me be your opponent. A small fry like you doesn't even qualify to challenge Mr. Luffy's Foot."

"Wait!"

Foxy's mouth twitched. "I said it's not a fight, it's a pirate game, Davy Back Fight!! Don't tell me you don't know? Are you really pirates?"

"Davy Back Fight?" Nami looked puzzled.

Robin explained, "It's rumored to be a game born in a certain pirate amusement park, a competition between pirate crews. The winner can plunder the other's crew members. If there are no desired crew members, they can also tear off the other's pirate flag."

"Is there such a game?" Vivi looked surprised.

"It originated from Honeycomb Island," Luffy added with a smile. "Do you see the strange pirate flag on Foxy's ship? It's not hanging on the mast, but stuck on the hull."

They looked down and indeed saw a graffiti-like flag. Below were two crossed bones, and above was a skull with what seemed like burning hair.

"That's a symbol of the Rocks Pirates, a legendary pirate crew that dominated the Grand Line before the birth of Pirate King Roger. This game is something they popularized, and many of their crew members were acquired through this method."

Pausing for a moment, Luffy continued, "Of course, the name Rocks has been erased. I doubt Foxy himself even knows the meaning of that symbol."

"Why was it erased?" Nami asked curiously.

"I'll tell you later."

Luffy looked up at Foxy and shouted, "Alright, I accept your challenge!"

Chapter 89 Is This The Crew Of
The Shichibukai? A Bunch Of
Monsters!

"Sure, I accept your challenge!"

Upon hearing Luffy's words, not only the Foxy West Blue Pirates, but even the Straw Hat Crew showed surprised expressions.

"Huh? Luffy, are you accepting their challenge?" Nami blinked her eyes.

"Although I don't think we will lose, isn't it the time for training?"

"Training and games won't conflict."

On the other side, the pirates of the Foxy Pirates opened their mouths one by one.

"What should we do? What should we do? He actually agreed!"

"Ah, we're done for, we will definitely lose!"

"If we lose, what if Straw Hat Luffy chooses me as a crew member?"

"He will definitely choose me! Damn it, I'll become one of Shichibukai's subordinates in the future!"(¬□¬)

"You fool, have you forgotten about Captain Foxy? You a reckless idiot without any bottom line! Do you deserve to be called a pirate? No need to think, if we lose, I'll join their crew"

Hmph!

Suddenly, a cold snort sounded.

The noisy pirates all shut up and looked at their captain.

Foxy's face turned dark, he didn't expect that Luffy would actually agree...

After all, the positions of the two sides are not equal, usually he would get to add some additional conditions.

[Damn Straw Hat, what is he planning?

Did he really set his sights on me?

That's right, that must be it!]

[If I lose, he will definitely choose me as their captain. Damn it!]

Farewell, excellent crew members of the Foxy Pirates. If I am chosen, I will definitely bid everyone farewell with a big smile!

Thinking of this, tears welled up in Foxy's eyes.

"Indeed, he must have been attracted to my excellent personality and beauty. I am truly the most suitable person for the Straw Hat Pirates! He will definitely choose me!"

"What are you talking about, Captain?" The beautiful crew member looked at him with disdainful eyes.

Panicked!

Foxy coughed and accidentally revealed his inner thoughts, "damn."

"Cough, cough, I understand now, Straw Hat Luffy! Since you have accepted my challenge, then let's begin, the Pirate Game!

He leaped down and jumped off the ship.

"It's up to you to choose what game to play. Baseball? Rowing? Sniping?"

Octagonal cage? Or team battle? Speak up! As the one who accepted the challenge, it's up to you to decide today's competition!"

Luffy's mouth curled slightly.

This guy is the Slow-Slow Fruit user, and this ability is quite powerful, but unfortunately, he's an idiot himself.

Since the other party has come to him willingly, he doesn't mind taking in another crew member.

"Let me think... Ordinary pirate games aren't really interesting."

Luffy thought for a moment and immediately smiled, "How about a team battle?"

"A team battle? What's that?"

"All the members of both of our pirate crews participate in the competition. The side with more survivors in the game wins."

Luffy looked at the two women beside him, "Nami, Vivi, create a larger thundercloud."

Although they didn't know what he was up to, the two women nodded in response to the command.

Vivi raised her right arm, palm facing the sky.

In an instant, the clear sky was suddenly covered in dark clouds.

A light drizzle started falling on the great grassland.

"The weather... has changed?!"

"Did this woman do it?"

"A Devil Fruit user!?"

The members of the Foxy pirate crew looked up in shock.

Then, Nami smiled and snapped her fingers.

The snap produced an electric current that shot up into the sky and disappeared into the clouds.

Immediately after, a loud rumble echoed.

Lightning flashed and thunder roared within the dark clouds.

The Fok West crew felt a chill run down their spines, their faces turning pale as they swallowed their saliva.

"Ca-Captain... Are we really going to compete? This is definitely... a Logia user's ability!" A burly man with a strong presence said in a trembling voice.

The Fok West crew was already scared silly, their jaws dropping to the ground.

Logia, one of the rarest types of Devil Fruit.

In the current era, the three Admirals of the Marines are Logia users.

They are: Ice, Magma, and Light!

And the two women standing next to Straw Hat Luffy must be, with a little bit of thinking, they immediately came to a conclusion.

Thunder Fruit!

Clouds, or Rain Fruit!

Gudong!

Foxy swallowed his saliva. Are these the crew members under the Shichibukai? Just two women, but they are monsters!!

"Um..."

"You can't back out now."

Luffy narrowed his eyes slightly, his Conqueror's Haki stirring but not released.

In Foxy's eyes, at this moment, sitting there with his legs crossed, holding a cup of tea, Luffy seemed to have a terrifying demon behind him.

The demon's tentacles were like black and red lightning, ready to strike at any moment.

"Alright! Let's continue the game! How exactly do we play?" Foxy immediately changed his tone.

"It's simple. Later, lightning will continuously strike from the thunderclouds. Everyone will be under the thunderclouds and find a way to avoid the lightning. After one hour, the side with more people still standing will win."

Luffy smirked, "This is a rule that favors you, isn't it? After all, you have over a hundred people."

In line with his words, Nami immediately brought down a lightning strike.

Boom!

The lightning struck the grassland, instantly turning a patch of green grass into blackness.

Foxy and his crew: "..."

Dead!

We will die!

"Wait!" The beautiful crew member wearing a strange hat immediately said, "This is unfair. You can completely control who the lightning strikes!"

"Well then, let's do it like this. Two lightning strikes per second, one for each side. Nami, be careful with your control, don't electrocute anyone, okay?"

"Don't worry, Luffy~"

Nami showed a wicked smile.

Luffy nodded in satisfaction and said, "Other than that, there are no additional conditions. We will start in one minute, and everyone will enter the cloud area."

Saying that, he took out a pocket watch and started timing.

Is this fair? Not fair.

Because Nami can completely control the power of each lightning strike,

she can make it stronger when attacking the Foxy pirate group and weaker when attacking her own crew members.

But there is never absolute fairness in the world. It's originally a game, as long as both sides can accept it.

Of course, Luffy is not planning to do that. He originally intended to conduct training for the Straw Hat Crew, and this training mode was originally scheduled for later.

Since Foxy has challenged, they might as well do it together.

"What should we do, Captain? Although I also want to join the Shichibukai, I don't want to be struck by lightning and die!"

"You bastard, you actually said what's on your mind!"

"Don't... don't panic, as long as we hold on, there will be a chance to be chosen!"

Foxy West's face turned dark, and he snorted, "Hmph, since the game has already started, no one is allowed to quit. Do you want our pirate flag to be humiliated? Attack!"

He waved his hand and took a step into the thundercloud.

Seeing that their enemy captain had taken the initiative to stand up, the Straw Hat Crew smiled and followed suit, stepping into the thundercloud one after another.

Finally, the remaining pirates of the Foxy West Blue pirate group hurriedly followed suit.

"Time's up!" Luffy closed the pocket watch. "Nami..."

"Wait, wait, aren't you three participating?" someone protested.

"Of course not, it will be unfair for the three of us to participate. This is a favor to you. Alright, let's begin, Nami."

Luffy waved his hand, picked up the glass of grape juice, and took a sip.

"Yes~"

Nami raised her right palm, with electric currents flowing in her palm. In the next moment, a lightning bolt struck the clouds in the sky.

Boom!

The lightning strikes began to erupt.

Two lightning bolts struck, one towards the Straw Hat Crew and the other towards the Fokke West group.

In an instant, screams filled the air.

Among the Straw Hat Crew, the one who was almost struck was Zoro.

With his Observation Haki, he dodged at the first moment and rolled on the ground.

"Hey! You are trying to hit me first, Nami, was that intentional!?"

"Miss Nami, well done!" Sanji applauded.

On the other side, the Foxy pirate group was not so lucky. A big guy was struck by lightning and immediately convulsed, falling to the ground with his hair standing on end.

"Capote!" everyone shouted.

"Don't get distracted, focus on dodging," Nami, with a evil smile, kindly reminded.

In the blink of an eye, the second lightning strike arrived.

Followed by the third, the fourth...

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The frequency of two lightning strikes per second made everyone afraid to lose focus.

One by one, they looked up at the thunderclouds in the sky, ready to dodge at any moment.

But soon, they realized that staring was useless. The lightning was too fast. By the time they realized it was going to strike them, it had already come down.

Unless they mastered Observation Haki and could hear the "sound" of the lightning strike in advance!

"Run!" someone shouted, and the next moment a group of people quickly fled.

Some even tried to run out of the range of the thunderclouds, but a thunderbolt that could pierce the earth like a death warning made those who had the idea of skipping class quickly give up.

In just ten minutes, half of the Foxy pirate group was already lying down. Vivi covered her mouth and whispered, "Mr. Luffy, will this kind of training be useful?"

"Just helping them move faster. Deliberately controlling the frequency of the lightning strikes. Originally, the plan was for ten strikes per second," Luffy shook his head.

As long as we squeeze their potential, they will always become stronger, and besides, it won't kill them.

Time passed slowly.

For Luffy, it was tea time.

For the people under the thunderclouds, it was like a escaping from hell.

Just running was not enough; they also had to be careful to stay away from others because no one knew who would be struck next. If someone was nearby, they might suffer an undeserved disaster.

Ah! Ah! Ah! Ah!

Every now and then, screams could be heard.

At first, it was the Foxy pirate group, but gradually, members of the Straw Hat crew were also struck.

After half an hour, the number of people decreased from over a hundred to less than 30.

And the fewer the number of people, the higher the probability of being

struck.

The exhaustion of physical strength, the threat of lightning strikes overhead, the movements of the enemy members...

Everything is pressing on the hidden potential of the crowd.

If someone's physical body is strong enough, even if they are struck once, they can still stand up.

If someone is caught up by the people around them, they twitch all over from just a graze.

"Damn it! Why are they always chasing after me?"

Foxy is running for his life, with one heavy strike after another falling behind him. Gasping for breath, he couldn't help but shout,

"Straw Hat Luffy, you didn't say I couldn't use my abilities, right?"

"You can."

After receiving the reply, Foxy suddenly stops and turns around, making a gesture.

Folding his thumb, middle finger, and ring finger, and then raising his index finger and pinky, in the next moment, rings of pink light shoot out towards the top of his head.

"Slow Beam!"

At the same time as the beam of light is fired, the lightning strikes through.

In that instant, its speed is slowed down by dozens of times.

And taking advantage of this opportunity, Foxy immediately takes a step back, evading the lightning strikes on top.

"Hahaha... If I can use the Slow Beam, I have nothing to fear from this mere lightning!"

He laughs triumphantly, "The one standing till the end will be me, Straw Hat Luffy!"

"Is that so?" Luffy leisurely drinks his tea, smiling without saying a word.

And the Straw Hat crew, who witnessed this scene, gradually realized what was happening.

"So you can use your abilities? Hahaha, you should have said so earlier!"

Valentine opens her umbrella and in the next moment, she flies into the air. Moving in the air, she is much faster than running on the ground.

"This is training, running in the sky is not allowed!"

Nami decisively adds a condition and snaps her fingers.

Boom!

Several lightning bolts struck Valentine in an instant, causing her to fall from the sky.

"Nami!!" Valentine screamed in agony, falling to the ground.

"Huff...huff..."

Mr. 3 pushed his glasses and waved his hand above his head, instantly creating a small candle house and hiding inside.

"What a fool, provoking the captain and harassing Miss Nami..."

Boom!

A lightning bolt struck the roof of the candle house but was blocked.

Seeing this, Mr. 2's eyes flashed and he quickly dove inside.

"Make way!"

"You bastard, don't push!"

"Can't you make it bigger?"

"If it's too big, it will attract attention. You really are an idiot!"

Upon seeing this, a cross appeared on Nami's forehead.

"I told you to train, but you're really good at slacking off!"

Once again, she raised her hand and unleashed a more powerful lightning force.

With a loud bang, the lightning pierced through the candle house,

causing the two inside to convulse from the electric shock.

"Run, if you don't run, I'll keep attacking you!"

"Devil!!"

The two dared not play dead and had no choice but to get up and run.

Too strong Nami, what a pitiful scene.

Luffy couldn't help but complain in his heart.

One hour later.

The thunderstorm finally subsided.

The survivors stopped in their tracks, gasping for breath.

Whether it was the Straw Hat crew or the Foxy crew, the few people still standing looked at each other, showing a sense of sympathy.

Truly a terrifying woman.

Luffy stood up and scanned the entire room.

"Not bad, you guys have persevered, worthy of praise," he said appreciatively.

At this moment, only Foxy Pirate's captain, Foxy, was still standing, but he was also exhausted and foaming at the mouth.

As for the Straw Hat Pirates, there were eleven of them.

They were: Zoro, Sanji, Usopp, Chopper, Bartolomeo, Mr.1, Mr.2, Mr.3, Mr.5, and the only three females, Robin, Nojiko and Kaya.

Everyone else had been electrocuted, including her sister even the little girl wasn't spared.

As for Robin and Kaya, they were never attacked from beginning to end.

Kaya was understandable.

As for Robin, Luffy seriously suspected that she secretly gave money to Nami.

Luffy looked at Nami suspiciously, then walked towards the others.

"How effective was it?"

Sanji breathed lightly, "Luffy, you might not believe it, but the effect is much better than we imagined!"

"That's right," the silent Mr.1 couldn't help but say, "I was hit seven times, but every time my stamina was about to run out, the medicine I drank earlier would strengthen my body and give me a new surge of power!"

"About an hour is just about right, and now this effect has disappeared," Usopp, exhausted, lay on the ground and weakly said, "Was this also part of your plan, Luffy?"

"As long as it's effective, rest for a while and continue later."

Luffy said with a smile.

Everyone: "..."

If Nami is a devil, then you are definitely a Father of demon!

You scoundrel!!

Of course, they could only curse in their hearts.

"Rest well, good days are still ahead."

Luffy patted Zoro's shoulder, walked up to Foxy, and said, "You lost, right?"

Thump, Foxy knelt on the ground and couldn't get up.

"Damn it! I have no choice, from now on, I am a member of the Straw Hat Pirates!"

Luffy: "..."

Why do you look so happy?

Notes

I suspect Author had already forgotten about Nojiko.

Chapter 90 Fire Fist Ace Is

Arrested, Big News For Summit

War! Arrived At The Capital Of

Seven Waters

[Recruited crew member Foxy, devil fruit user. Obtained 200 adventure coins]

After losing the pirate game, Foxy joined the Straw Hat Crew.

At the same time, Luffy also received a reward of 200 adventure coins.

After everyone regained some strength, Foxy solemnly bid farewell to the pirate crew he once led.

His subordinates were very reluctant to see him leave, so they held a farewell party on the island that evening.

They invited the Straw Hat Crew to participate, as well as the two pirate crews who were hostile during the day. They all happily drank together at night.

Luffy did not participate, but he did not stop his crew members.

It's not that he dislikes this kind of gathering, but he simply doesn't like a noisy atmosphere either.

And when he appears, the atmosphere of the party will be off.

It's similar to a modern-day company gathering. Everyone is enjoying their meal and drinks, chatting and having fun until the leader arrives, and a sudden hush falls over the crowd.

Knowing this, he didn't join in the fun.

Alone, Luffy came to the shore and stood in front of the Merry Go, once again taking out Ace's life card.

Before, only one corner was burning, but now it has spread, almost half of the paper has been burned, and there is no sign of it calming down for the time being.

"Are you still fighting?"

Luffy fell into contemplation.

In such situation, why is Ace not escaping?

Or, maybe he couldn't escape.

Putting aside Ace's issue, Luffy was more concerned about Blackbeard's movements.

Why did Blackbeard and his group leave Mock Town at that time? What did they want to do?

He inherited Rock's will and wanted to dominate the world.

In the original story, capturing Ace and handing him over to the Marines to start the Summit War was part of his plan.

He knew that Ace was Roger's son and that Whitebeard would not give up on Ace.

The Marines would definitely publicly execute Ace, and Whitebeard would definitely come to rescue him.

And the target was Whitebeard's Shock Fruit.

"I also need to be prepared in case Whitebeard dies, so we can't let Blackbeard have the Shock Fruit. Before the war comes, we must obtain a blank fruit."

While pondering, Zoro walked over with a bottle of wine.

"Luffy."

"What's up?"

"There's no one on this island, don't you find it strange?"

It's clearly a very suitable island for human habitation.

There are no people, but there are many strange animals.

Long-bodied dogs, horizontally developed wolves, slender birds, even the apples on the apple trees are long like cucumbers.

"How come there are no people on this island."

"too strange"

Zoro was surprised.

Luffy lightly laughed and explained it to him briefly.

Long Ring Island is very unique, surrounded by ten small islands in a

circle, forming a circular shape.

"For most of the year, the waters here are in a state of high tide, flooding most of the area, and only the ten small islands remain above water."

"But there are also a time each year when the tide recedes, and only during this time does Long Ring Island truly reveal its original appearance."

"And the people who live here are nomads, migrating to the next small island during the low tide."

Pausing for a moment, Luffy jokingly said, "Your Observation Haki range is too small, it can't cover the whole area, that's why you think there's no one here. In reality, in the north of us, on the opposite small island, there are many people living there."

Zoro suddenly realized and admiringly said, "I see."

Not only that.

The next island after Long Ring Island is the City of Seven Waters.

The City of Seven Waters experiences a massive tidal wave every year, known to the locals as the Water Gods' "Aqua Laguna."

And the time when Long Ring Island's tide recedes is almost the same time as when the Aqua Laguna occurs in the City of Seven Waters.

"How can I train my Observation Haki to have such a wide range like you?" Zoro frowned.

"This will require hard work! Some people are born powerful; but not everyone is lucky, they have to earned it through diligence and sweat!"

Of course excluding the systematic people.

Luffy spoke earnestly, "Instead of Observation Haki, you should first master Armament Haki."

"Is there a good method?"

"Don't use your Sword, try using your fists to break the Candle Wall of

Mr. 3."

Mr. 3's Candle Wall has a hardness comparable to iron.

Zoro's eyes lit up, grinning, "I got it, thanks, Captain."

Saying that, he turned around to find Mr. 3.

The banquet continued until the next morning.

A group of drunkards lay scattered on the ground.

Luffy opened the Adventure Shop and made some purchases, getting a box of six-style Devil Fruits, which was on sale.

It only cost 500 adventure coins to buy one box.

Immediately, he called Chopper and had him extract the essence according to previous procedure, making it into Strengthening Water.

After that, it was training time.

They didn't use Thunderclouds for training like the previous day, but instead found suitable opponents to spar with.

Afterward.

On the third day, the fourth day.

When the fifth day arrived, everyone's training finally paid off.

[Shipmate Zoro has mastered Paper Arts, Shave, Iron Body, rewarded with 600 adventure coins]

[Shipmate Sanji has mastered Moonwalk, rewarded with 200 adventure coins]

[Shipmate Bartolomeo has mastered Iron Body, rewarded with 200 adventure coins]

In addition, Usopp learned "Paper Arts," Yosaku learned "Shave," Johnny learned "Iron Body," Nojiko learned "Shave," and both Robin and Chopper mastered "Finger Pistol."

Of course, the ex baroque work Five Men also each mastered one of the six styles.

Unfortunately, the Three Women were too weak and temporarily no one has mastered any moves.

In total, they consumed seven six-style Devil Fruits and ultimately gained 3200 adventure coins.

[Adventure Coins]: 6825

"Profit! Originally, with only 7 fruits, one could only master 7 moves. But now, not only are there so many people who learned, but I also made coins. If I continue with this method, soon everyone will be able to master the Six Styles, and I won't even have to spend money, instead I'll make more money"

Luffy thought happily.

This shouldn't be considered a loophole in the system, but rather the result of everyone's hard work. He only provided a little insignificant help.

"Nami, is the magnetic pointer fully charged?"

"It was fully charged last night. Do you want to end the training?"

"Training can be done anytime. It's about time we head to the next island."

The captain's orders were quickly passed down, and the Straw Hat Crew finished their training one by one and boarded the ship.

The three pirate ships set sail towards the next island.

The newly joined Foxy was temporarily assigned to the second team.

On the deck of the Sunny.

Luffy took out Ace's Life Card again.

At this moment, the Life Card was only the size of a fingernail.

"After six days and five nights of fighting, it seems like Ace lost"

Grand Line, a certain autumn island.

There is a small town here where bounty hunters gather, and many

information merchants sell information about pirates here.

But on this day, the entire town was almost empty, everyone had run away.

Many people set sail, but they didn't go far. Instead, they looked back at the terrifying scene on the island.

A huge fireball almost engulfed half of the island, as if a scorching sun had appeared out of thin air.

And the terrifying power that extinguished the scorching sun turned almost half of the island into a permanent winter island, completely changing the local climate.

Blizzards raged, and the bone-chilling cold could even reach the sea.

"The sun has gone out! Is it finally ending?"

"What exactly is going on? The battle has been going on for so long, has a winner been decided?"

"Marine Admiral Aokiji and Whitebeard's second division captain, Fire Fist Ace!"

After days of continuous battle, the final conclusion finally arrived.

The ending was not unexpected.

At this moment, in the center of the battlefield.

Ace fell to the ground with a thud, no longer having any strength to move a finger.

"Ah... he's tough, worthy of being one of the Four Emperors' commanders.

If I gave him another ten years, I might not be able to defeat him," Aokiji exhaled a cold breath, looking equally tired. He walked step by step towards Ace, taking out a Den Den Mushi.

"Hello, it's me."

"Aokiji?"

"Well, how should I put it, I've got the person."

"Well done."

"I want to request a..."

Before he could finish saying the word "vacation," the other side spoke first.

"Bring him back and return to headquarters as soon as possible. After that, Kizaru and Akainu will also be summoned back to headquarters.

Aokiji... prepare for war!"

Click.

The call was cut off.

Aokiji scratched his head and sighed in resignation. "Going to war with Whitebeard? Admirals really have a tough life!"

Three days later.

The Straw Hat Pirates' fleet entered the waters of the Sabaody Archipelago.

And a piece of news spread throughout the world ahead of time.

On the deck of the Sunny Go.

Vivi looked up at the news bird flying overhead and caught the newspaper it dropped.

"Huh? They're not charging for it!" Nami exclaimed in surprise.

"Every time there's major news, the World Economic News doesn't charge..."

Vivi had a bad feeling and opened the newspaper to read it together with Nami.

At first glance, both of them turned pale.

The headline on the front page was enough to shock the world.

The photo showed a man being arrested by the Marines.

"Execution Notice for 'Fire Fist' Ace"

The shorter the news, the more weight it carried.

"Fire Fist Ace..." Robin happened to pass by and exclaimed in surprise,

"Isn't he Luffy's adopted brother?"

"Luffy!!" Vivi shouted towards the sky.

On the Ark Maxim, on the deck.

Luffy watched as Zoro used Mr. 3 as a punching bag to practice, his fists hitting the wax wall repeatedly until they bled.

Zoro had been training day and night for Armament Haki these past few days.

Upon hearing Vivi's shout, Luffy immediately jumped down.

"What's wrong?"

"Take a look at this."

Vivi handed him the newspaper, and Luffy's expression froze slightly. He probably guessed what it was about.

Taking the newspaper, he saw that indeed, Ace had been arrested.

"Hmm?"

Slightly surprised, Luffy noticed that the news mentioned Aokiji capturing Ace, not Blackbeard.

Aokiji?

The Marines wouldn't go so far as to fabricate news just to boost their reputation, and even if they did, they wouldn't bring up Aokiji.

So, was it really Aokiji who captured Ace?

Then where is Blackbeard? What was Blackbeard doing?

Luffy couldn't help but frown.

Nami hurriedly said, "The news says that Ace will be publicly executed in a month. What should we do, Luffy? He's your brother, right?"

Several girls looked at Luffy with concern.

Luffy, on the other hand, remained calm and unsurprised. He returned the newspaper to Vivi and smiled, saying,

"It will probably take the Marines a month to mobilize their forces. They will also test the reaction of Whitebeard's pirate crew. Anyway, let's first go to the capital of the Seven Seas!!

New World, Cake Island."

"Mamamama... Did they catch the kid on Whitebeard's ship? How interesting!"

A large and obese woman sat on the queen's throne, grinning as she watched the news. The drool that fell from her mouth seemed to sizzle on the ground like sulfuric acid.

In front of her, a tall man with a scarf covering his mouth spoke in a deep voice,

"Whitebeard won't stay silent, Mama. Marine Headquarters is probably going to clash with Whitebeard!"

His name was Charlotte Katakuri, a member of the Four Emperor's Big Mom Pirates, the pinnacle of the Charlotte family, and one of the Sweet Commanders!

"Mama, should we do something?"

"Hmph, Whitebeard is already old. We can't be sure what kind of reaction he'll have."

New World, Wano Country.

Kaido squinted his eyes and a pleased smile appeared on his face.

"Jin, go and investigate from the sky. Keep an eye on that old man Whitebeard!"

"Kaido Sama, should we take this opportunity to take over Whitebeard's territory?"

"Worororo... Aokiji occasionally does something good! Go, Jin!"

"Yes!"

On the deck of the Moby Dick.

One of the Four Emperors, Whitebeard Edward Newgate gathered with his pirate crew.

At this moment, the atmosphere within the Whitebeard Pirates was extremely solemn.

"Damn it, that bastard Aokiji!"

"Ace has been captured. It's really reckless. The Sea of Paradise is within the jurisdiction of Marine Headquarters. Going there will definitely attract attention."

"I should have stopped Ace at that time!" Marco's face was filled with regret.

"Gu ra ra ra ra..." Whitebeard gulped down a barrel of wine and slammed it hard on the ground.

"That guy Sengoku wants to start a war? He thinks I'll back down? I am Whitebeard. Get ready to set sail, my boys!"

Dressrosa.

Doflamingo, one of the Shichibukai, received a Naval Headquarters Vice Admiral in the royal palace.

Dalmatia said in a deep voice, "That's the situation. Shichibukai

Doflamingo has called for a roundtable meeting of the Shichibukai. Come with me to the headquarters."

Doflamingo sat on the throne, crossed his legs, and grinned as he looked at the news.

"Furfurfurfur... The sea is about to go wild. Whitebeard won't stay silent. War is imminent"

"That's why we need the power of you Shichibukai!"

"Furfurfurfu... Then let's go. The construction on the island has been going smooth lately. I'm already bored to death."

He stood up and said, "By the way, that brat, Straw Hat Luffy, will he

come?"

"What's the matter? Are you interested in him?"

"I'm a little interested in someone who can take down that bastard Crocodile."

"I don't know if he'll come, but a Vice Admiral has already invited him. According to the route, they should meet in the capital of Water 7."

....

Water 7.

When the Straw Hat crew's fleet arrived at the port, it caused a sensation.

The pirate ship flying in the sky attracted countless citizens to come and watch.

"These people here aren't afraid of pirates at all?" Usopp said, confused.

"Who knows, let's just get off the ship for now."

Zoro dropped the anchor and was the first to jump off.

Chapter 91 Greetings From

Marine Vice Admiral! Target:

Pirate Empress!

The City of Seven Waters is a beautiful city built on water.

The entire city is surrounded by the sea, with extremely tall white city walls dividing it into the inner city and the outer city.

The outer city extends all the way to the coast, with yellow-roofed houses scattered in a circular pattern around the city walls.

The inner city, on the other hand, is much more organized. Starting from the high city walls, it extends towards the center, where there is a huge fountain at the highest point.

At this moment, the three pirate ships of the Straw Hat Crew arrived at the southern coast.

The residents of the outer city, attracted by the Ark Maxim, began to

gather around with strong curiosity.

Countless people looked up, filled with incredible astonishment:

"Wow, a ship flying in the sky, how amazing!"

"That's the flag of the Straw Hat Pirates. Why would the Shichibukai come here?"

"So dazzling!! Is the ship made of real gold? Or is it gold-plated?"

Under the sunlight, the golden deck of the Ark Maxim reflected a dazzling brilliance.

The Sunny and the Merry docked at the coast, and everyone jumped off the ships and onto the shore.

The Ark Maxim also descended, with its bottom almost touching the ground.

The acting captain, Bartolomeo, created a staircase with a barrier, and the members of the second team walked down one after another.

"The people here aren't afraid of pirates? Is it because we're Shichibukai?"

"On the contrary, since Shichibukai have the legal right to plunder. They should be more afraid. Right?"

Nami shook her head, also finding it strange.

Zoro stood on the Merry and said to everyone, "Luffy, I'll stay here to guard the ship. Number 3, you stay too."

To save time, he named his own sandbag for training.

Mr. 3 readily agreed, feeling that his status was skyrocketing and he was taking another step towards promotion and a raise.

"Thank you for your hard work."

Luffy nodded and said to everyone, "To discuss the modification of the Ark Maxim, it's most convenient to go directly to the mayor here. I'll visit him personally, and you can move freely."

"Then I'll go check out the food market here," Sanji said.

"I want to go to the library here..."

Robin loved reading books and had come to a bustling city. As soon as she arrived, she wanted to go to the library to collect some interesting books.

Luffy interrupted her, saying, "Robin, come with me."

Saying that, he left ahead.

Robin hesitated for a moment and had no choice but to follow the captain's footsteps.

Seeing this, Nami also joined them.

"Don't you want to explore this city?" Luffy asked, surprised to see her following.

Among the girls on the ship, Nami was the one who loved shopping the most. Whenever they arrived at a new place with a shopping street, she would definitely take everyone to indulge in some wholesale shopping.

"The matter of renovating the Thousand Sunny is more important. I need to keep an eye on it!" Nami said somewhat embarrassedly, linking her arm with Luffy's and pouting.

Robin smiled lightly and asked, "Luffy, is there a specific reason why you asked me to come along?"

"There is indeed a special reason."

As they walked and talked, Luffy briefly explained the reason.

On this island, there was a group of government agents lurking.

CP9, the full name being CIPHER.POL.No.9!

CIPHER-POL was a secret organization directly under the World Government, and CP9, numbered 9, was the elite among the elites. Only those who fully mastered the "Six Powers" beyond human cognition were qualified to join.

"So, will I be targeted?" A hint of understanding sparkled in Robin's

bright eyes. She wasn't surprised at the idea of being targeted.

In her 20 years of life on the run, she had dealt with other CP organizations and had a thorough understanding of her situation.

CP1-8 were more well-known to the public, and she had only heard of CP9 for the first time.

"Of course, they will target you. These agents have the right to kill anyone who obstructs their official duties. It's similar to the Shichibukai's legal plundering qualifications. They have the power of 'legitimate killing'."

"So that's why you wanted me to come along... Thank you, Luffy."

Robin revealed a charming smile. Luffy was a reliable and considerate captain, and she felt warm.

Nami smiled and said, "Don't worry, Robin. I will protect you! CP9, whoever they are, if they dare to come, I will defeat them all! Luffy, can we beat these government people?"

"It's a given. Anyone who threatens you deserves beating."

If they needed to be fought, then they would be fought. CP9 was nothing special.

Three people entered the inner city area.

As a water city, the Seven Waters Capital is filled with various waterways and bridges.

To move around here, one must rent a small boat, which is powered by a fish called "Bulls" acting as a water camel.

Although it is called a fish, it actually looks more like a seahorse.

The three of them boarded a small boat together and headed towards their destination, the shipbuilding company.

The residents here are very enthusiastic, and the men here love to strike up conversations.

Even if they recognize Luffy, the Shichibukai, when they see Nami and Robin by his side, they will whistle along the riverbanks.

Seeing these Luffy couldn't help but give them a fierce look, leaving them dumbfounded.

Who is this person? Is he in heat?

Oh, it seems that humans are indeed creatures in heat all year round.

Nami couldn't help but chuckle at his jealous behavior, then she kissed him to ease his anger.

Luffy wasn't angry, he just thought it was too ridiculous. After all, he is a Shichibukai, a notorious pirate with a title. Yet the men here dare to strike up conversations with the women by his side.

They truly have no fear of death, making him wonder who gave them the courage.

Of course, this is just a small episode, adding some laughter to their journey.

The Seven Waters Capital, Galley-La Company.

The company's headquarters is located in the mayor's mansion.

The man named Iceberg is both the mayor of this city and the president of the Galley-La Company.

Although he is called the mayor, he is somewhat similar to a "king" in a normal country.

Because this city does not belong to any country and is not an independent kingdom, it has its unique way of survival and local laws.

It does not have a conventional armed forces like a normal country, nor does it have the same social status in politics.

The highest authority here is called the mayor.

For now, the Seven Waters Capital is still an underground term.

Similar to Robin's hometown, Ohara.

Ohara is also not a country and does not belong to any country. It is just an island where archaeologists gather.

And here, it's a special settlement established by skilled shipbuilders.

Many years ago...

There were seven large shipyards here, and now, the seven have merged into the world's largest shipbuilding company - Galley-La Company!

At the mayor's mansion.

Secretary Kalifa pushed open the door of the mayor's office, pushed her glasses up her nose, and expressionlessly said to the iceberg-like mayor sitting behind the desk, "Mr. Iceberg, news has come from the downtown area that one of the Seven Warlords of the Sea, Straw Hat Luffy, has landed on this island."

"Seven Warlords of the Sea?"

Iceberg, who was dealing with official business, looked shocked. "Straw Hat Luffy... isn't he the rookie pirate recognized by the government some time ago?"

"Yes. There is relatively little information about this Shichibukai. He rose to prominence recently and was initially offered a bounty of 71 million berries by the government for killing two Marine colonels in the East Blue. But strangely, the bounty poster only requested him to be captured alive. About half a month later, he defeated the original Shichibukai Crocodile and took his place."

As the secretary, she reported the relevant information without smiling.

"What is his purpose for coming here?" Iceberg's expression became serious.

Could it be that he wants to plunder the capital of the Seven Waters?

Impossible. Their relationship with the government is very good, and the government's Marine orders are all completed here.

Even if he is a Shichibukai, if he comes here to plunder, the government will not remain silent.

"We don't know their purpose for now, Mr. Iceberg. Should we send someone to make contact..."

Before Secretary Kalifa could finish her sentence, a noisy sound came from outside.

"No, stop! The mayor's office is ahead!"

Then, with a click.

The door to the office was pushed open.

Luffy stepped in, glanced around, and looked at Iceberg.

"Hello, Mayor Iceberg."

"Iceberg...!" Iceberg was greatly surprised. Did he just barge in? He really is a pirate!

Kalifa, who was standing beside him, frowned and immediately showed a displeased expression.

"How rude! If you want to see Mayor Iceberg, please make an appointment in advance!"

Speaking, she lifted her long legs in fishnet stockings and kicked towards Luffy like lightning in high heels.

Her kicking skills were exceptional, even able to create afterimages with each kick.

However, before her attack could hit, Nami easily blocked it with her with a beautiful kick.

Bang!

With a dull sound, Kalifa's expression changed slightly, and she was secretly surprised.

"Don't be too rude, Miss Secretary. We are valuable guests here to deliver money," Nami said with a smile as she retracted her right foot.

Seeing this, Iceberg immediately said, "Don't be foolish, Kalifa. The Shichibukai is a big shot. Apologize first."

"En..." Kalifa also retracted her fishnet stocking leg and slightly bowed to Luffy. "I apologize, Mr. Luffy."

"Mayor Iceberg."

Luffy temporarily ignored her and went straight to sit on the sofa. "I have a ship that needs some modifications. Can your company do it?"

So it's about business?

Iceberg breathed a sigh of relief and was about to nod and discuss the specific requirements.

But then her gaze fell on Nico Robin.

Her pupils contracted!

Devil's Child?

No!

Just a resemblance?

Iceberg's mind shook. He had seen Robin's wanted poster when she was 8 years old, and the woman in front of him looked too similar. Considering her age, she should be 28 if it was her.

Appearance, age, it all matched!

Is she really the Devil's Child?!

Iceberg's hand holding the feather pen trembled slightly.

"We will pay, we're not here to freeload on your labor," Nami also sat on the sofa and took out a photo of the Ark Maxim, saying, "These are the specific requirements..."

Then, a long list of modification details followed.

The power system cannot be changed, nor does it need to be changed.

Enel's design is already very perfect.

The main changes will be in the appearance and some internal

compartments.

After listening silently, Iceberg said to Kalifa, "Serve our guests some tea."

Kalifa immediately brewed three cups of black tea and served it to the three of them.

Iceberg then suppressed his inner shock and said with a smile, "Since we are here to discuss business, let's do it in a business-like manner. Your requirements are not difficult. I will send someone to inspect the ship later, and we can discuss the price after the specific results are available."

Pausing for a moment, he asked, "Where is your ship?"

"On the southern coast. You can see it as soon as you go there," Nami replied.

"I see. Kalifa, go and inform Kaku to go and take a look," Iceberg instructed.

"Yes!"

The secretary nodded and left the room.

Then, Iceberg smiled and said, "Mr. Luffy, I would like to have a private conversation with you."

Luffy probably knew what he wanted to talk about.

Giving a signal to the two women beside him, they stood up and left.

"..." Luffy lifted the cup of tea and took a sip before saying, "Go ahead."

"About the two people by your side..." Iceberg began.

"Nami is my navigator, and Nico Robin is my archaeologist," Luffy said straightforwardly. "I probably know what you want to say. Are you concerned about dealing with a government wanted criminal?"

"So you know!" Iceberg confirmed Robin's identity and couldn't help but frown. "This woman is Nico Robin, the government's wanted criminal and a Devil Fruit user. If the government finds out..."

"The government already knows. They even sent Aokiji to bother me not

long ago," Luffy said.

Iceberg was immediately stunned.

They knew that Nico Robin was under the protection of this Shichibukai and still sent an Admiral to deal with it?

The process is complete, as for the result, there's no need to say.

Nico Robin standing here unharmed indicates that everything is resolved.

The government gave up?

Impossible!

Luffy chuckled and said, "Instead of worrying about that, why don't you focus on yourself? In your hands... hmm?"

Just as he was about to mention the "blueprints," he suddenly looked to the side.

Knock knock~

The door was knocked.

"What's going on?" Iceberg asked in a deep voice.

"Iceberg-sama, Marine Headquarters Vice Admiral is here to see you,"

Kalifa's voice came.

"Please come in."

Iceberg glanced at Luffy and nodded after a moment of contemplation.

Then, a man dressed in a striped suit, with a Marine justice cloak draped over his shoulders, led a few Marine subordinates into the office.

"Hello, Mayor Iceberg. I am Marine Headquarters Vice Admiral, Mozambica."

Mozambica, the Vice Admiral, first greeted Iceberg before looking at Luffy on the sofa and said, "I'm sorry if I'm interrupting. Because the matter is urgent, I came to find this person specifically."

"Mozambica, Vice Admiral?"

Luffy raised an eyebrow.

"Seven Warlords of the Sea, Monkey D. Luffy. The headquarters is preparing to hold a roundtable meeting of the Shichibukai to discuss an important matter. I am here waiting for you on purpose," Mozambica said in a deep voice.

As for what the important matter is, it's obvious that there's no need to ask.

Luffy smiled and said, "How long have you been waiting?"

"I arrived yesterday, not long ago," Mozambica said. "You can come with us to the headquarters. The warship is ready to depart at any time."

"Go to the headquarters? Can I refuse?" Luffy teased, unable to resist saying so when he saw the serious expression on the guy's face.

"Don't joke around..."

The Mozambica's face darkened. Could Mr. Garp's grandson also be as willful and reckless as Garp himself?

"As a Shichibukai appointed by the government, you must obey the government's orders when necessary. This matter is extremely important. Under normal circumstances, it would be forgivable, but if you refuse this time, your title will definitely be revoked!"

He admonished with a serious tone.

"Is it so urgent?"

Luffy frowned.

There's still a month until the Summit War, why are they summoning the Shichibukai so early?

The Marines themselves haven't deployed enough forces, have they?

According to the original story, there were 100,000 elite soldiers from all over the world, and there were several thousand Vice-Admiral level fighters alone.

The Mozambica had to patiently explain. After all, he was Garp's

grandson, different from the other Shichibukai. For Garp's sake, he had to say a few more words.

He had also received a lot of care from Garp in the past.

"We need to gather other members afterwards, so we have to be quick."

"So you just came to pick me on your way?"

Luffy rolled his eyes. "Who are we picking up?"

"The Pirate Empress, Boa Hancock," Mozambica said in a deep voice. "It will take some time to go from here to the Calm Belt, and then return to the Marine Headquarters. Time is limited, Luffy-san..."

"So it's on the way, huh?"

Luffy's interest was piqued when he heard the name of the Empress.

As a man, it's normal to be a little interested in the rumored world's most beautiful woman, right?

Anyway, he would eventually have to attend the meeting, so it wouldn't hurt to take a look at this number one love brain beauty along the way, Right?

Mozambica: "... [If I had known it would be like this, I should have mentioned the Empress right from the start.]

[But, I'm afraid he'll be disappointed. The Pirate Empress is a woman who despises men to the extreme.]

Chapter 92 Awakening And

Foretelling The Future, Landing

On Daughter Island

Although he said "let's go," it was not possible to leave immediately.

As a responsible leader, things that need to be arranged still need to be arranged.

"You guys go to the port and wait for me, I will come later."

"Understood, please come as soon as possible."

Vice Admiral Mozambica was not worried about Luffy running away. He immediately greeted Mayor Iceburg and walked out of the office with his subordinates.

"I will be leaving for a while. Mayor Iceburg, I entrust the matter of the ship to you," Luffy put down the red tea in his hand and said as he stood up.

"You can rest assured, I will not play with the reputation of our Galley-La Shipbuilding Company."

Seeing that Luffy was about to leave, Iceburg immediately stood up and took a few steps to see him off. "Regarding Nico Robin..."

Luffy leaned close to his ear and whispered a few words.

Then he patted his shoulder and smiled, "Take care of yourself. Well then, goodbye. I'll probably come back here in about a month."

Iceburg stood still, his expression extremely serious.

On the other side, Luffy left the mayor's mansion with Nami and Robin.

"I'm going to attend the Shichibukai meeting. You two can stay here for now."

"Will it be dangerous?"

Nami looked worried.

Luffy shook his head, "It's not dangerous for me, but..."

As he spoke, his gaze turned to Robin.

Because of the incident with Aokiji before, Robin now wouldn't be easily manipulated by CP9's agents with just a few words, like in the original story, for the sake of the "Straw Hat Crew's safety."

The problem is not CP9, but once he leaves, the World Government might send someone to capture her.

And he couldn't bring Robin with him to attend the Shichibukai meeting.

"Luffy, don't underestimate me. I'm already used to dealing with this kind

of thing," Robin laughed softly.

"Well then..."

Luffy took a moment to think and made some arrangements for the two of them.

Mr. 2 of the second team, whose real name is Bentham, is a user of the Clone-Clone Fruit ability. When they were in Alabasta, he perfectly disguised himself as the King of Alabasta.

He will pretend to be Robin and attract attention from others.

As for Robin herself, she will have to disguise herself a bit. This is not a problem for Robin, as her 20 years of experience on the run have taught her various strange skills.

"This is indeed a good plan," Nami's eyes lit up, agreeing.

"It will probably take me a month to come back. The modifications to the Ark Maxim will also take some time. Don't slack off during this period of training," Luffy said, bidding farewell to the two women.

Using his Observation Haki, Luffy quickly found Chopper's presence. He and Usopp and the others were strolling on the main street.

After thinking for a moment, he immediately headed towards the southern coast.

[You have arrived at the new island, Water 7. Reward: 1000 Adventure Points.]

[Adventure Points: 7825]

He opened the adventure shop and began searching for the items he urgently needed.

There were two things he wanted.

First, the Blank Fruit.

Second, the Six Styles Fruit.

The former was for backup, in case Whitebeard died and the Shock Fruit

couldn't be wasted.

The latter was for investment!

Yes, it was for investment.

With the physical enhancement water developed by Chopper, he would buy Six style Fruits for the crew members to enhance their combat abilities. This way, he would earn more Adventure Points.

Today's luck was good. The shop had the Haki Fruit available.

Although it wasn't his current target, his Observation Haki was only one level away from level 5, so he bought it without hesitation.

[Adventure Points -200]

Refresh, refresh, refresh!

In total, he refreshed seven times, consuming a total of 1320 Adventure Coins.

He didn't see any blank fruits, but he bought two boxes of Six Styles fruits and three individual Six Styles fruits.

A total of 15 Six Styles fruits.

Consumed a total of 2300 Adventure Coins.

Continuing to refresh anymore is not cost-effective. It costs 1280 each time, which is too expensive, so I give up.

[Adventure Coins]: 7825→4005

Return to the southern coast.

Zoro is punching Mr. 3's wax wall with all his might. His fist is wrapped in bandages, and blood is seeping through.

Seeing Luffy return, the two immediately stopped their training.

"You're back so soon, Luffy? How did things go with the ship?"

"I left the ship to Nami. Zoro, take these and give them to Chopper later."

Luffy hands over 15 Six Styles fruits to Zoro, without waiting for him to ask, and quickly explains the Shichibukai meeting.

After listening, Zoro immediately understands.

"So, you're going to save Ace?"

Wow, Zoro, you've become quite smart!

Luffy looks at him in surprise.

Zoro's eyebrows jumped fiercely. "Don't take me for a fool. I saw the news of the public execution, and combined with your actions, it's not surprising to guess. But how did you anticipate it would turn out like this? When we were in Alabasta, you obtained the title of Shichibukai, was it all for this moment?"

Luffy pats his shoulder and says with great seriousness,

"I've trained my Observation Haki to an advanced stage, so I can predict the future. I told you before, didn't I?"

Zoro is instantly dumbfounded, with a blank expression on his face.

Can you really see the future that far?

"Keep it up. By the time I come back, you better have mastered Armament Haki, or else I'll have to teach you personally, and the process might be a bit rough."

After finishing the necessary matters, a Marine warship happens to sail from not far away.

Vice Admiral stood at the bow of the ship and shouted, "Are you ready yet, Straw Hat Luffy? We don't have much time!"

"Alright then, goodbye Zoro. Please pass on my message to the other crew members."

Luffy smiled slightly and turned to leave.

Zoro silently withdrew his gaze as he watched Luffy board the warship.

At that moment, his heart, technique, and body concentrated together, and he punched the wax wall.

Bang!

In an instant, a crack appeared on the wall.

"Number 3, your wall isn't that strong, huh?" Zoro grinned.

The warship.

A spacious room.

As one of the Shichibukai and the invited party, Luffy naturally had the largest room to himself.

Sitting on the sofa, he took out the Haki fruit he had bought earlier and ate it on the spot.

[Observation Haki]: lv4 → lv5

His auditory power was strengthened once again, and his Conqueror's Haki had reached an advanced stage!

At the same time, he also gained the power of foreseeing the future.

Of course, it wasn't as terrifying as Zoro had made it sound, being able to see things that would happen a month or even two months later.

The power of foreseeing the future with the sense of Observation could only see a very short period of time.

Just a few seconds.

"Level 5 is not the limit. At least I haven't mastered the ability to 'see and kill' yet. It seems like I'll have to continue buying Haki fruits in the future."

Luffy fell into deep thought.

[Since the Six Styles fruit can extract effective ingredients and produce body-enhancing water, could Haki also be made into something practical?]

[I had considered letting Chopper give it a try before, but I didn't have any spare Haki fruits for experimentation.]

Now that my Conqueror's Haki has reached an [advanced stage, it's worth a try.]

[The only problem is that the probability of obtaining a Haki fruit is much lower than that of a six styles fruit.]

Just as he was thinking about it, there was a knock on the door.

Then, Vice Admiral Mozambica walked in, followed by a marine pushing a food cart.

Luffy's gaze sharpened, and he immediately saw a glimpse of the future.

[It will take six or seven days to get to Daughter Island. Luffy-sama, I don't know if you're hungry, so I had food sent over.]

He already saw what Mozambica was gonna say, but there was no need to show off on the spot.

Sure enough, as soon as Mozambica entered the door, he spoke up.

"It will take six or seven days to get to Daughter Island. Luffy-sama, I don't know if you're hungry, so I had food sent over."

"Thank you."

The marine immediately placed the food from the cart on the table in front of the sofa.

Naturally, there were also drinks, including alcohol.

It seemed a bit strange to have alcohol on a warship, but this mission was specifically to welcome a Shichibukai, so it was acceptable to make preparations in advance.

The marine nervously poured a glass of red wine for Luffy.

Luffy picked up the glass and took a sip, asking, "Will it take six or seven days to return as well?"

"No, that's the ideal situation. That woman never responds to summons..."

Mozambica's expression turned sour when talking about the Empress.

Why send him to pick up the Empress?

Hawkeye and the Empress are the two most independent Shichibukai.

Although the others also have their own issues, most of the time they still

respond to summons.

With curiosity, Luffy asked, "Never? Not even once?"

"Yes! Since she took on the title of Shichibukai 11 years ago, she has never attended a meeting!" Mozambika replied in a deep voice.

Luffy couldn't help but laugh.

That's how it is, and the title of Shichibukai still remains.

The World Government is truly a great benefactor.

Of course, this is a joke.

The actual situation is that the World Government has a secret plan and has been developing a humanoid weapon called "Pacifista".

They have fused the bloodline of a special race and secretly extracted the genes of the Shichibukai.

The cyborgs created from this has combat power that is almost comparable to that of a real Shichibukai.

"They didn't have a chance to extract my genes, but I have to be careful not to leave any loopholes later."

Luffy thought to himself, looking at the food on the table.

When it comes to extracting genes, the best target is, of course, human tissue.

For example, when eating, it is possible to leave something behind.

As soon as he boarded the ship, the Mozambika brought him delicious food, maybe with this idea in mind.

"Luffy San, I won't disturb you while you eat. If you need anything later, you can order the marines outside at any time."

Leaving these words, the Mozambika left with the person and when he reached the door, he couldn't help but say one more thing.

"Anything else?" Luffy ate generously and asked.

"About the Pirate Empress... it's best not to provoke her, or you'll be

turned into stone! Her ability is very troublesome!"

As a man, Mozambica naturally understands the attraction of The Pirate Empress.

Although Luffy is also a Shichibukai, He still advised, if Luffy were turned into stone, it would be troublesome.

"Thanks for the reminder, don't worry, I know her ability very well."

"Well then, goodbye."

Click. The door was closed.

Luffy shook his head and thought seriously while enjoying the food.

If the Empress were to release her ability on him, would he turn into stone?

The answer is one hundred percent he will turn into a stone.

This ability is too buggy.

As long as there is a moment of attraction, being mesmerized by her beauty, the body will petrify.

Even without the kind of infatuation between men and women, even with thoughts like "so cute" or "what a beauty," it is still possible to turn into stone.

The Cyborg created based on the Empress is in the form of a young girl, and she can replicate the Empress's ability to turn others into stone.

Surely not everyone will lust after a young girl, right? But still so many people turned into stone.

In fact, just feeling "cute" is enough to fall victim!

Haki can resist it. With my current Haki, consciously resisting her ability will not be a problem.

Luffy thought calmly.

The only thing to note is to use Haki before being petrified. Once petrified, the person's thinking will be frozen, and there will be no time

to release Haki.

But this is not a problem at all, after all, he can see into the future!

Time flies, seven days later.

The warship sailed against the Grand Line and finally entered the Calm Belt.

For Marine warships today, the sea area that is difficult for ordinary ships to navigate is not a problem at all.

Similar to seastone, a substance is installed on the bottom of the warship that can release a pheromone that Sea Kings dislike, so they will not be targeted by the creatures living in the Calm Belt.

[You have sailed in the Sea of Paradise for 7 days, rewarded with 700 adventure coins]

Inside the room.

Luffy sat on the edge of the bed, boredly looking at the blue sea outside the window.

The system prompt arrived as scheduled.

During these seven days, in addition to the daily sailing rewards, the crew members in the Seven Water Capital have also been continuously mastering new six styles.

The previous investments have been rewarding every day.

Up to now, those people have mastered a total of 26 styles, accumulating a feedback of 5200 adventure coins.

Especially Zoro, has become the third person to fully master the Six Styles, after Vivi and Nami!

[Adventure Coins]: 4005 → 9905

Suddenly, a knocking sound is heard.

Voices of the Marines can be heard from outside.

"Luffy-sama, we are about to enter the waters near Daughter Island."

"Understood."

Daughter Island, also known as Amazon Lily, is a country formed by women.

The ruler of this country is one of the Seven Warlords of the Sea, the Pirate Empress, Boa Hancock.

Before becoming a Shichibukai, she had a bounty of 80 million berries from a single expedition!

Now, after so many years, disregarding her title, this woman's strength must have reached...

Over 1.6 billion!

At this moment, Daughter Island.

"Sister-sama, it's a communication from the Marines!" Marigold immediately reports to the Pirate Empress, "The warship has arrived outside the island and they are requesting us to come out and meet them."

"Hmph, does they know the rules of Daughter Island. Since they didn't request permission to land, let's give them some praise."

The Pirate Empress sits on a cute pink python, her delicate face showing a disgusted expression.

"I hate the Marines, and I hate the government even more. I have no interest in the gathering of the Shichibukai."

"But... are we just going to ignore this?"

"Well, let me think..."

With her eyes closed, the Pirate Empress stands up and walks outside step by step in her red high heels.

"The warship that came to welcome us, daringly intruding into the Sea King's territory, ultimately met an unimaginable end in the sea. Will the Naval Headquarters accept such a result?"

A smile appears on the corners of her mouth as the Pirate Empress's voice reaches the ears of her two sisters.

"Let's go, Marigold and Sandersonia, let's go and meet them~"

Chapter 93 The World's Most

Beautiful Woman! Luffy: Sneak

in? I Walked In Openly

Calm Belt, near Daughter Island.

On the deck of a warship, countless marines, some holding swords, some holding guns, all with serious expressions, looked towards the direction of Daughter Island.

The gate opened, and a pirate ship sailed out from behind the gate, slowly heading towards the warship.

"They're here, Vice Admiral Mozambique, that's the Perfume Yuda, the pirate empress's Ship"

"All hands on alert! That's the pirate empress, who knows what she'll do!"

Mozambique loudly reminded all the soldiers.

Gulp~

The sound of swallowing saliva.

The soldiers were all nervous, but also excited.

After all, she was rumored to be the world's most beautiful woman, and soldiers are also men, naturally they would have the thought of catching a glimpse of her beauty.

"So nervous?"

Luffy sat on the main cannon of the warship, holding an apple in his hand, casually taking a bite.

"Luffy-sama, you shouldn't take it lightly either!"

Mozambique reminded him with a serious tone.

Soon, the pirate ship of the empress approached and stopped parallel to

the warship.

The Perfume Yuda pirate ship flew a pirate flag with a skull enveloped by nine snakes that resembled the sun in appearance.

The women of Daughter Island, also known as the Kuja Tribe.

In addition to wind sail power, the ship itself also had two huge sea snake camels underneath, allowing it to freely enter and exit the Calm Belt.

After the ship stabilized, many female crew members on the deck gathered on the side closest to the warship.

"Marine's technology has also improved. Such a large warship, daringly docking in the center of this monster-infested sea area. Quite courageous, Marine."

The speaker was a short-haired woman, with a pink snake wrapped around her right arm and a quiver hanging on her back.

Seeing this woman, Luffy had a vague impression, but forgot her name specifically.

Upon hearing this, the marines showed displeased expressions.

Mozambia said in a deep voice, "This is a new generation warship, reinforced with seastone, which can eliminate a certain amount of presence and avoid Sea King's attacks. But if it stays still for a long time, it will be discovered sooner or later!"

New technology? A new generation of warships?

The members of the Nine Snake Pirates frowned slightly.

Only to hear Mozambia continue, "According to the agreement between your Nine Snake Pirates and the government, our warships cannot enter within a 3-kilometer range. However, the effectiveness of this agreement is based on your compliance with the government's dispatch!"

At this point, he took a deep breath.

"Are you not coming out yet? Seven Warlords of the Sea, Pirate Empress, Boa Hancock! I am here on behalf of the Marine Headquarters to welcome you!"

"Oh my~, why are you shouting so loudly?"

"These men, truly without any taste."

"Living men, it's been a long time since we've seen any! Whenever we're out on an expedition in the open sea, be it merchant ships or other pirate crews, the moment they spot our flag, they flee faster than anyone else."

The response to him was the voices of women expressing disdain.

A vein popped on Mozambica's forehead, and he angrily said, "Nine Snake Pirates! Every time the government calls for you, your response is always that you will participate and come as soon as possible, but you have never kept your words! Don't think that this kind of willful behavior can continue forever. This time it is a mandatory call from the government. If you still want to play this trick, the title of Shichibukai will definitely be revoked! Do you understand this, Pirate Empress!"

Squeak~

On the deck of the Perfume Yuda, the door to the stern tower slowly opens.

Accompanied by the sound of high heels stepping on the deck, a tall and graceful black-haired woman slowly appears before everyone's eyes.

"Finally decided to show up?" Mozambica's expression becomes extremely serious.

"The compulsory gathering of the Shichibukai? Have we finally reached the point where the Marine Vice Admiral personally comes to welcome us?"

The Empress's voice is cold. She steps onto the stairs, stepping on the head of one of the sea snakes, and extends her fair and slender fingers,

pointing towards the direction of the warship.

The sea snake moves its head, acting as the stairs, and escorts the Empress to the front of the Marines.

At this moment, the mysterious veil of the rumored Pirate Empress is completely revealed before the eyes of the men.

She has a tall figure, black long hair styled in a princess-like manner, a smooth forehead, slender and delicate almond-shaped eyes with a hint of coldness, a high and straight nose, rosy lips, and a pair of golden snake-shaped earrings hanging from her ears.

She is dressed in a black cheongsam with gold thread, and a white cloak is draped behind her.

At this moment, with one hand on her waist, slightly tilting her head, she silently gazes at the Marines.

Her attitude looking extremely arrogant.

"This... is the rumored Pirate Empress?"

"I've never seen her in person before... She truly deserves the title of the world's most beautiful woman!"

"Damn it! She's acting as if she looks down on us... She's... she's just too beautiful!"

The marines initially showed anger on their faces, but as time passed, their expressions crumbled one by one, completely surrendering to her beauty, revealing their infatuation.

The face of the Vice Admiral turned black, this group really embarrassed the Marines!

On the other side, Luffy was also sizing up the Empress.

Indeed, she is very beautiful, with an outstanding temperament that can arouse a man's desire to conquer.

She is completely different from Nami and Vivi in terms of temperament.

Of course, this is the impression she gives on the surface. In reality, she is like a blank sheet of paper, completely obsessed with love.

This is also a kind of charm, although it is not popular now.

Just like the charm of a tsundere in a different environment.

Luffy thought to himself, silently watching the show on the side.

In order to prevent his subordinates from further embarrassing themselves, the Vice Admiral decisively accelerated the pace of the conversation and said bluntly,

"Our warships have all arrived here, what is your answer?"

"It's really distressing. I don't want to participate in the war at the Naval Headquarters, but I also don't want to be stripped of my title as a Shichibukai," the Empress sighed lightly.

"Is there such a good thing in the world? Don't think you can be as willful as as always" Mozambique's face turned ugly.

"Don't worry, Marine Vice Admiral. I also want the goods on your warships," the Empress smiled faintly.

His fist clenched! Mozambique couldn't bear it and angrily said, "Don't joke around! We're not children. Do you think I would agree to such a request!?"

At the same time as he burst into anger, the many subordinates behind him couldn't wait any longer and began to act.

"Hurry up! Hurry up! Send everything over to the empress"

"What a Beautiful Angel she is~"

"Whatever it is, I'm willing to give it to her!"

These idiots!!

The face of the Vice Admiral turned ugly.

In the next moment, the Empress leaped down from the head of the sea snake, her face filled with a slightly ironic smile, and she stretched out

her arms in front of her chest, making a heart-shaped gesture.

"The corrupt and wicked desires that are infatuated with me will harden your bodies... Mero Mero Mellow~!"

In an instant, a wave of pink heart-shaped rays swept through everyone. The Marines who were tempted by beauty, one by one, maintained a posture with hearts in their eyes, and in the blink of an eye, they turned into stone statues.

And in this crisis, the Vice Admiral, Mozambica, was the first to take out a dagger and fiercely stab it into his own palm.

Blood dripping on the deck.

The Empress's mouth curled up. "Impressive, Naval Headquarters Vice Admiral. Your reaction is quick, using intense pain to suppress temporary evil thoughts, huh?"

Damn it!

Veins bulged on the flying squirrel's forehead.

The Empress's gaze shifted slightly, glancing at the naval cannon on the warship, where a man was still eating an apple, completely in a spectator state.

From the moment she appeared until now, his mouth hasn't stopped chewing.

Luffy laughed, "You're not doing so well, Mozambica. You warned me to be careful earlier, but you weren't careful yourself."

"Luffy-sama..." The Vice Admiral felt ashamed.

A Shichibukai just like me!

The Empress narrowed her eyes slightly, ignoring the man as if he were air.

"You just said it yourself, Marine Vice Admiral. This warship is a new generation, equipped with seastone to avoid Sea King's attacks. But if it

stays here for too long, it will eventually be discovered."

"What do you want to do?" the flying squirrel gritted his teeth.

"I don't want to do anything. With all your subordinates wiped out, you alone can't control such a large warship. Even if I leave it alone, the Sea Kings that inhabit this area will devour you all."

The Empress blinked and turned away.

"Impressive, Princess Hime"

"Let these stinky men fend for themselves here!"

"How long can you hold on, Vice Admiral?" the women on the deck cheered to welcome their queen.

Mozambia pulled out a dagger, covered her wound, and stood up, saying,

"The public execution of Fire Fist Ace has been scheduled. It will take place in Marineford's plaza. Boa Hancock, I will wait for you here for half a month. If there is no response within half a month, you will bear all the consequences!"

The Perfume Snake Head returned without looking back.

No reply at all.

"Damn Pirate Empress!" Mozambia's face turned pale with anger.

"Hahaha... she really is an arrogant woman," Luffy laughed and suggested, "Why don't you contact the government now, strip her of her title on the spot, and request support from Marine Headquarters? Bring the Buster Call fleet and bombard Amazon Lily. How about that? Then, she can only blame herself, right?"

A satisfying revenge.

Obviously, Mozambia is not the protagonist of this satisfying story.

Mozambia shook his head and said, "My mission is to bring back people and reduce the casualties as much as possible. Her combat power is outstanding. I will try my best to negotiate with her."

"For the upcoming battle against Whitebeard pirates. Strong combat power is needed"

"It doesn't matter how willful the Empress is now. What matters is to make her accept the summons."

"With one more powerful force, there will be fewer casualties for the Marines in the war. I don't care about a little humiliation to myself,"

Mozambia tore off a corner of his cloak and used it as a bandage to wrap his wound.

"She won't accept the summons," Luffy said, watching the Perfume Snake Head gradually move away, grinning, "Forget it, I'll help you guys once."

Saying that, he leaped and flew towards the pirate ship.

"Luffy-sama?" Mozambia was startled and quickly reminded, "Men are prohibited from landing on Amazon Lily..."

Ignoring his words, Luffy was already standing on the deck at the stern.

[They won't fight, right?

No, it's highly possible that he will be turned into a stone.]

The Empress not accepting the summons is still within an acceptable range. If even Luffy is petrified, he won't be able to explain it when he goes back.

After all, compared to the Empress, Monkey D. Luffy, is more valuable.

Just as Luffy was heading to the Daughter Island with the help of the Perfume Yuda...

Naval Headquarters.

A vast information room.

Garp is flipping through the Marine's historical intelligence data alone.

In his capacity as a Vice Admiral, he dismissed everyone.

"The Rubber Fruit... There must be something wrong with this fruit."

When they were in Loguetown, Luffy deliberately showed him his

awakened state, trying to convey some kind of message.

Although it is clearly a Paramecia - Rubber Fruit, it exhibits characteristics of a Zoan.

In the awakened state, Luffy's speed, strength, and so on, have all greatly increased.

He can even turn his body into rubber.

That punch is still fresh in Garp's memory.

"This fruit was brought by that bastard Shanks, and about 10 years ago, Luffy accidentally ate it."

As a grandfather, Garp naturally knows about this past.

Although he didn't spend much time in Windmill Village, he still learned about the situation as soon as he found out that Luffy had become a Devil Fruit user.

At this moment, he is flipping through the "Devil Fruit Encyclopedia".

However, the further he flips, the more serious his expression becomes.

Until the last page.

"None?"

Garp is stunned, and he flips through it again, not believing his eyes.

Still nothing!

There is no record of the Rubber Fruit in the encyclopedia!

This is impossible!

The Devil Fruit Encyclopedia is not made by the Marines.

It is an "ancient" Devil Fruit Encyclopedia that appeared at the same time as the Devil Fruits in this world.

That was a long, long time ago, so long that the exact era cannot be known.

"What's going on? What did that red-haired bastard give Luffy to eat?"

Garp frowned.

There are only two possibilities for a fruit that is not recorded in the encyclopedia.

The first possibility is an artificially developed Devil Fruit, a new variety.

The scientist Vegapunk of the World Government has been studying the replication of Devil Fruits. Under the government's orders, a new Devil Fruit could have been developed, although the possibility is not small.

The second possibility is that the Rubber Fruit has some special characteristic that is why it is not included in the encyclopedia.

"The encyclopedia here belongs to the government... Does the government know about the Rubber Fruit?"

Garp fell into deep thought.

Luffy himself obviously knows that the fruit he ate is quite special.

"You kid, you'll come to headquarters for the meeting soon, and I'll personally ask you then."

Not a worry-free situation!

Garp sighed.

His grandson ate a very special fruit and became a pirate.

Now another grandson was captured by his own disciple, and soon he would be executed publicly...

Sitting in his chair, Garp closed the encyclopedia and felt a sense of confusion.

[You have arrived at the new island, Daughter Island. Reward: 10000 adventure points.]

When the Perfume Snake returned to the port, Luffy also received a system prompt.

Another 10,000 points!

Just like Sky Island.

Daughter Island, located in the Calm Belt, obviously does not belong to

the scope of Paradise Sea, and the reward is also ten times the the Paradise Islands.

"I remember there is another uninhabited island near Daughter Island...

There used to be a country there, but it has already perished."

In the original story, Luffy trained there.

If I go there, can I earn another 10,000 adventure coins?

Where is it?

Luffy pondered and thought he could ask the Empress directly.

On the other side.

The Empress returned to the palace with her two sisters.

"Nee-Sama, are you really going to ignore this?"

Sandersonia couldn't help but speak. She didn't know how long the

Marine Vice Admiral would persist, but it was obvious that he would report the situation here to the headquarters.

Will they really have to face the situation of being stripped of their titles?

With the Marines having warships that can sail through the Calm Belt, Daughter Island is no longer safe.

"Don't worry, sister Sonia. Marigold comforted her. "Hasn't Nee-Sama rejected the government's summons before? But the title is still intact until now."

"But, this time is a bit different..." Sandersonia still had some concerns.

The Empress ignored her two sisters and went straight back to her own chamber. The moment she pushed open the door, she had a blank expression.

In her own seat, a man was sitting quietly, with his legs crossed, supporting his cheek with one hand, and drinking her precious red wine.

"Oh, you're back?" Luffy took a sip of the red wine and greeted, "Waiting for you to come back. M..."

The three sisters tilted their heads in confusion, full of question marks.

(◉.◉)(●_●)(◉.◉)???

The Empress widened her eyes, her chest heaving with anger. "How bold of you to infiltrate and sneak into my chamber."

Luffy remained remarkably calm. "Sneak in? I walked in openly!"

Chapter 94 No, The Empress Has
Been Taken Away

Infiltration or entering openly, it makes no difference to the three sisters.

As the name suggests, Amazon Lilly is an island inhabited only by women, with an absolute law of "no men allowed" for hundreds of years.

"Seven Warlords of the Sea, Monkey D. Luffy!"

"Did you infiltrate our ship on the way back and followed us all the way here?!"

Second sister Sandersonia and third sister Marigold looked at each other with a serious expression, feeling extremely annoyed at the other's relaxed attitude.

Illegal entry, disregard for the prohibition, death penalty!

The Empress was equally angry, her eyes filled with coldness.

She extended her index finger and lightly touched her lips, transforming it into a huge pink heart, then shot out a pink arrow.

"Slave Arrow!"

As the target of the arrow, Luffy immediately reached out his right hand and caught it with a snap.

Seeing this, Marigold sarcastically said, "Foolish man, even if you have no feelings, this move from our elder sister will still come with forced petrification!"

"Just now on the warship, I don't know what trick you used to escape the tragic fate of petrification, but this time it's different, you're done, Straw

Hat Luffy!" Sandersonia also believed that victory was in her hands, crossing her arms with a triumphant expression.

But the Empress frowned slightly.

Luffy chuckled, these two sisters are quite funny.

He held the hand holding the Slave Arrow and exerted a little force, crushing it gently.

Snap! The pink arrow was directly crushed by him.

"What?!" The two sisters showed a stunned expression.

The Empress's slender eyebrows trembled.

Armament Haki, and it's a very powerful Armament Haki!

"No wonder you dare to infiltrate Amazon Lily, you do have some strength!"

She suddenly rushed towards Luffy, and her movements after getting close were as agile as a snake. She kicked back, aiming her high-heeled shoe at Luffy's face.

Perfume Femur!

This attack also had an impressive Armament Haki, possessing the power to petrify everything.

Luffy's gaze narrowed, instantly seeing through the future.

In the brief future he heard and saw, the Empress's kick didn't really do anything to him.

Raise your right palm, Conqueror's entwines, and black and red lightning emerges in the air.

Bang!

In an instant, a dull roar, the shockwave sweeps through the empress's chamber, as if a hurricane has suddenly appeared.

"Conqueror's!?" The two sister's pupils shrink, unable to believe what they are seeing.

Conqueror's entangled!?

Compared to them, the empress is truly shocked.

Her kick didn't even touch the opponent, as it was blocked by his palm from a distance.

[What is this man... even the Conqueror's entwines that I couldn't master!]

"Don't be so angry, I'm not here to fight with you. I just drank some wine, and I can compensate you with a few bottles later," he says casually.

As soon as he mentioned it, the empress's expression became even more furious.

Behind her, the two sisters instantly transformed.

"Sister, we'll help you! Snake Hair Possession*2

Two giant pythons almost filled half of the room.

One person's hair is covered in flames, while the other person's hair is woven into eight snake heads.

"I just came to ask for directions... forget it."

Luffy immediately disperses the Conqueror's, grabs the empress's beautiful ankle, and forcefully propels himself forward.

At the same time, he quickly stands up, holding onto the off-balance empress, and in the next moment, they break through the window.

"Onee-Sama!"

The two sisters are shocked and immediately rush to the window.

But their transformed bodies are too large to fit through the window.

Sandersonia sees the guardians outside the window and immediately shouts, "Quick, stop that man!"

Aphelandra is a very tall female warrior. Upon hearing the shout, she immediately looks up and sees Luffy carrying the empress, flying over their heads.

She is instantly shocked and shouts,

"Oh no, the empress has been kidnapped!"

While shouting, she takes off the bow and arrows from her body, preparing to shoot.

Someone nearby tried to stop her: "No, it will harm the Empress, hurry and chase after them!"

Meanwhile,

The Empress was completely dumbfounded.

It wasn't until someone shouted that the Empress had been kidnapped that she finally snapped out of it.

Deeply disgusted by men, she immediately felt both physical and psychological discomfort.

Damn man, turn into stone!

She immediately activated her power to petrify Luffy.

Seeing her move, luffy who had already seen the future, immediately spoke:

"Celestial Dragon's hoof."

The Empress's pupils contracted, her body trembled, and she foolishly lost all will to resist.

Luffy leaped onto the roof and looked down at the sluggish empress, whispering: "Is there any uninhabited island near Daughter Island? Which direction is it? Can you point me in the right way?"

"You... you are sent by the Celestial Dragons..."

The Empress bit her lip, her voice trembling.

Contrary to her previous arrogant image, she appeared weak, pitiful, and helpless.

"What?"

Luffy was taken aback for a moment and then smiled, saying, "Sorry for

poking at you unintentionally, but your ability is indeed troublesome. As for the Celestial Dragons, it has nothing to do with me."

After thinking for a moment, he decided to be a young master again.

"My father is Monkey D. Dragon, the leader of the Revolutionary Army, aiming to overthrow the Celestial Dragons."

The Empress was stunned.

The person whom the World Government called the "world's most vicious criminal," the person with the highest bounty in the world, was the leader of the Revolutionary Army, which sought to overthrow the rule of the Celestial Dragons?

Her mind was momentarily blank, unable to sort out her thoughts.

She instinctively raised her slender finger and pointed in a direction.

"Thank you!"

Luffy immediately entered Gear Fifth.

In the next moment, the roof beneath his feet softened, and with his step, it quickly sank.

Afterwards, with a swoosh, the two of them seemed to transform into a beam of silver light and shot up into the sky, disappearing in the blink of an eye.

"Empress!"

The country's protectors who were chasing after them from behind were all in a panic.

At this moment, in a small teahouse by the street, an old lady with a small stature put down her newspaper.

"What's with all these noise?"

"Elder Nyon... something terrible has happened! Princess Hime has been kidnapped by a man!"

"What did you say!?"

Elder Nyon fell off her chair with a bang.

"How is that possible! Where did a man come from on this island? No, even if a man really did come in, how could the Princess, with her strength, be captured by someone?" she exclaimed with wide eyes.

Sandersonia and Marigold arrived late.

Looking towards the direction where the Empress disappeared, they gritted their teeth and spoke.

"Marine! Is this how you decided to handle it when Sister refuses to be summoned?!"

Near the Women's Island, three kilometers away.

On the deck of a warship, lifelike stone statues of marines stood.

Vice Admiral Mozambica took out a pile of bottles and jars from the infirmary and applied medicine to his wounds.

The pirate Empress's Devil Fruit is too troublesome!

It cannot be blamed entirely on his subordinates.

After all, a man who can maintain his will in front of that woman, it's hard to say whether he exists in this world or not.

No, it's not just men, even women or beasts would be captivated by this power.

"Ha..." Mozambica sighed, "If Luffy goes to Daughter Island, it'll be troublesome."

Just as he was thinking that, a Den Den Mushi in his pocket started ringing.

Pururupuru~

A call from headquarters? Urgent? What's there to rush about! Unless the Admiral comes, it's all the same no matter who it is!

Subconsciously, Mozambica thought as he took out a small Den Den Mushi from his pocket.

After connecting, a roar immediately came from the other side.

"Marine! Bring our Sister back, Don't think you can leave this sea area unharmed after doing something like this!"

Is it the Nine Snake Pirates?

Mozambica was instantly confused.

"...What?"

[You have arrived at the new island of **, reward: 10,000 adventure coins]

Made a profit!

A huge profit!

Just a trip to Daughter Island, easily earned 20,000!

[Adventure Coins]: 29,905

Ah, the boredom of the rich~

Luffy threw the Empress to the side and took a deep breath of the island's air.

This is the smell of "adventure coins".

If there were more islands like this, he would definitely accumulate six or seven figures of adventure coins and live a financially free life.

Thinking like this, it suddenly started raining on the island.

The drizzling rain fell on Luffy's face, causing him to look surprised.

"Does it rain in the Calm Belt too?" he said incredulously.

It seems like it does.

The Calm Belt doesn't have much air movement, but it's not completely still, there are still clouds above.

Suddenly, a terrifying Conqueror's Haki came from behind, but this kind of Conqueror's Haki was unstable, fluctuating between high and low.

Luffy turned around, the Empress's expression complex.

"The Hoof of the Celestial Dragons... where did you learn about it? If you

can't discern the direction, this lady will guide you. Can you answer now?"

The hoof of the Celestial Dragons.

The world nobles who reside in Mariejois, the emblem of the Celestial Dragons.

Anyone who is a slave of the Celestial Dragons will be branded with this mark.

It is a indelible mark burned onto the skin with a red-hot iron.

Of course, Luffy is well aware of the past of the Boa sisters, and now he is considering how to calm down the other party.

"Thirteen years ago, the Fishman adventurer Fisher Tiger climbed the Red Line with his bare hands, caused a commotion in the holy land of Mariejois, and liberated the slaves imprisoned there."

The empress trembled, slightly turning her head away, afraid to look at Luffy.

She grabbed her arm with her right hand, unconsciously exerting a lot of force.

"Don't worry too much, I have never looked down on you."

As he spoke, Luffy opened the adventure shop.

After swiping five times, he casually bought a box of six-style fruits. Of course, his goal was not this, but...

[Self-healing fruit]

Adventure coins -100

With a flash of white light, a fruit fell into his palm...

"Here, take it."

Luffy tossed the self-healing fruit to her.

At this moment, the empress was completely absent-minded and didn't catch it. It hit her forehead directly.

Thud.

The empress's eyes turned cold.

"You even know about such past, it seems, I have no choice but to kill you here!"

"...."

Then, Conqueror's Haki erupted.

The empress's aura surged, filled with intense hatred.

Seeing her actions Luffy shouted, stop "Don't worry too much, I never looked down on you" Luffy was confused? I just threw a fruit at her, it's not something humiliating right? Further more he still has some thought of LSP.

[Men are all scoundrels. Moreover, this person also knows about my most shameful past. Regardless, I must kill him.]

Even if the other party possesses Conqueror's Haki, the empress has already made up her mind to either kill him or die in this place!

Coincidentally, this is an uninhabited island, so no one else will be involved!

Seeing the empress's gaze becoming stronger and stronger, Luffy said with a speechless face: "The thing I gave you is called the self-healing fruit. It should also be effective for injuries like the Celestial Dragons hooves. Eating one can restore your beautiful back."

Being branded with a hot iron is definitely considered an injury.

Upon hearing his words, the empress was stunned for a moment, and her momentum that had just risen quickly plummeted.

Her eyes trembled lightly, her eyelids drooped, and then she saw the object that had hit her earlier.

It was a small green fruit.

"The Healing Fruit?" The Empress squatted down in confusion, picking up

the fruit from the ground. "Aren't you trying to humiliate me?"

"Why would I humiliate you, I have done nothing to you? It's your own fault for not catching it properly. Consider it a reward for showing me the way." Luffy smiled.

He made a big profit of ten thousand and gave back a few hundred to the person who showed him the way. It was fair, because it was a profit for him.

"I'm just too kind of kind person~"

"Eat it quickly, and after you finish, hurry up and take me to other uninhabited islands!" Luffy urged.

What is the most beautiful woman? At this moment, earning points is the most beautiful.

The Empress looked bewildered.

What exactly does this man want to do?

She couldn't understand at all.

After flying her to this island, she didn't see any special purpose he had, and now he wants to go find other islands?

Holding the Healing Fruit in her hand, she stood up and frowned, staring intently.

The silver-white figure gave her a strong sense of oppression.

Very strong!

"Are you saying that if I eat this fruit, my Celestial Dragon's hoof will disappear?"

"Yes... probably." Luffy wasn't very sure either, after all, the Empress's injury was from over a decade ago.

"How do you know about my past?" The Empress stared intently.

"You talk too much. Don't tell me you think no one can find out about your past? I have already told you my background" Luffy bluffed.

He used the nonsense again.

He couldn't exactly say that he found out by watching her bathe.

Although it was from his past life, it couldn't be explained.

The Empress clenched her hand, feeling nervous and afraid to face her own shameful past.

"Can it really work?"

"You're really wasting time."

The empress gritted her teeth, unafraid of the possibility that the fruit might be poisonous, and took a small bite.

The flesh brought a refreshing sensation.

From her back.

The empress suddenly widened her beautiful eyes. Although she couldn't see her own back, this strange feeling gave her some confidence.

[Will that thing really... be removed?]

She had thought about removing such a mark, but couldn't do it.

Firstly, she didn't dare to face it, nor did she want to show that mark to anyone, not even a doctor!

The Daughter Island do have skilled doctors, but she was unwilling.

Secondly, through consulting some medical books, she also understood that such a mark was difficult to remove.

At least with the medical level of the Kingdom of Women, it was impossible.

At this moment, seeing a glimmer of hope, the empress completely disregarded everything else and quickly swallowed the entire fruit.

The cool sensation from her back became even clearer.

"How is it?" Luffy asked with a smile.

At this moment, the empress's expression was truly interesting.

That expression, filled with hope and a bit of joy, but also afraid of being

disappointed, was completely different from her previous cold demeanor.

It was as if she was a different person.

Then, he saw the empress starting to undress.

While taking off the upper part of her cheongsam, she turned around.

She lifted her black hair and revealed her smooth back to Luffy.

Her voice trembling, she asked, "Can... can you see my back?"

Luffy: Beautiful....

Classic replay.

"Quickly tell me, this is not something worth showing off!" The empress bit her lip, forcibly suppressing the shame in her heart.

"There's nothing." Luffy rubbed his chin and grinned, "Such a beautiful back, it's a waste not appreciate it."

Chapter 95 Nee-Sama, Don't Be

Fooled By This Bad Man!

"Is it really... not there?" The Empress's tone was somewhat incredulous.

"No."

"Really... not there?" Her tone gradually became delighted.

"Wait! I need to take a closer look. Maybe I didn't see it clearly." Luffy decisively changed his statement and approached to appreciate it.

This was a request from the "No. 1 Beauty" Boa Hancock herself, and not even saint could say otherwise.

It must be said that the healing Fruit is indeed quite miraculous.

Even injuries from over ten years ago can be healed perfectly. At this moment, the Empress's back skin was as smooth and tender full of temptation.

Making people really want to touch and feel it.

But such behavior would be too obscene, so forget it.

Suddenly, a slight sobbing sound rang out.

Luffy raised an eyebrow and couldn't help but laugh, "Are you crying?"

The Empress sat down on the ground in a duck-like posture.

Tears fell down her slightly drooping cheeks.

Seeing a beautiful woman cry, he actually found it a bit amusing.

He was also a bad man, it seems.

Perhaps it was because the previous Empress's attitude was too high, the contrast revealed now gave him a different kind of feeling.

If he joined the Chambers of Whippers, he might become a devotee of pleasure.

"I...I'm sorry for being rude to you earlier."

The Empress wiped away her tears and a smile appeared on her face.

And coincidentally, the continuous drizzle on the island stopped, and the sunlight once again shone through the dense forest, casting the Empress's smile like a beautiful flower in full bloom.

Luffy looked completely surprised.

Could this woman also be favored by the Gods, able to influence the weather with her mood?

As if guessing his thoughts, the Empress explained softly,

"This island has 48 seasons in a year, with a change of seasons once a week. Within a season, the climate changes very quickly."

As she spoke, she put on the qipao she had taken off again.

"I see," Luffy nodded, "Are you sure you don't need me to take a look? I think there might still be some residue."

Upon hearing this, the Empress paused in her dressing, finding it somewhat amusing.

How did this man manage to avoid her Mero Mero Mellow?

Previously on the warship, the petrifying rays covered everyone, including him.

Shaking her head, she said softly,

"No need, I will confirm with a mirror later. The Fruit you gave me is truly amazing. I apologize for my rudeness earlier, Monkey D. Luffy."

"Just call me Luffy."

Luffy sat cross-legged.

"Luffy, from now on, you are my guest. I allow you to set foot on Amazon Lily."

Saying so, the Empress became a little nervous, her tone difficult to articulate.

Seeing her expression and actions, Luffy immediately guessed what she was thinking.

"You want to ask if I still have this kind of fruit? You want to get two for your sister?"

"Yes!"

The Empress's eyes lit up, hoping to get a positive answer.

"Not anymore."

The probability of the Healing Fruit appearing is also very low, even lower than that of the Haki Fruit. I don't remember encountering it more than a few times. I bought it twice, one for Zoro and one for the Empress.

"Is... that so?" The Empress's eyes dimmed.

She also understood that this kind of miraculous fruit must be very expensive and rare. It was her greed for wanting more, which was very impolite of her, especially considering her previous actions.

Thinking so, she stood up, revealing a smile and said,

"Luffy, although I don't know why you came to this uninhabited island, where there are only fierce beasts, I have only given you the direction.

Compared to what you have done for me, I owe you. Please let me take you back to Amazon Lily and treat you well."

Relieving a burden in her heart, the Empress's attitude made a 180-degree turn.

Luffy didn't have much interest in Amazon Lily Island.

"I want to know if there are any other islands nearby."

"Nearby?"

"Any island will do."

"There are none."

The Empress shook her head and said, "Within a radius of 500 kilometers around Amazon Lily Island, there is no third island."

As for places farther away, she doesn't know.

Luffy was very disappointed about this.

He patted his butt and stood up.

"Well, forget it. Let's go back. Since I brought you here, your country must be in chaos now, after all, you are the Empress of the Amazons."

"Yes, just call me Hancock."

Saying this, the Empress looked at Luffy, wondering how to go back.

Luffy couldn't help but laugh.

"Hold on to me tightly! We'll be faster than when we came!"

Saying that, he lifted the Empress up and leaped into the air.

Three kilometers away from Amazon Lily Island, a warship dropped anchor in the open sea.

The Kuja Pirates Perfume Snake appeared once again.

On the deck, numerous female pirates stared fiercely at the Vice Admiral across from them.

The Vice Admiral smiled bitterly and said, "It wasn't me... I don't know anything!"

"Hmph, Men are really deceiving scumbags. Straw Hat Luffy, the Shichibukai, wasn't he brought here by you?"

"That's right, it must have been a planned operation, right? Once our sister refuses the summons, you're ready to forcefully capture her?"

The two sisters of the Empress were extremely angry.

"I've said it several times, this was an accident, I..."

"Hand her over quickly! Otherwise, we will sink your warship!"

The atmosphere is tense, and a battle could break out at any moment.

The enemy is the entire Nine Snake Pirates, except for their captain, Empress.

On the Marines side, there is only one person...

Vice Admiral Mozambica couldn't help but break out in a cold sweat.

Luffy, what have you done!

He had thought that a fight might break out, but he never expected that Empress would be Kidnapped.

This is troublesome!

The Shichibukai are indeed a bunch of notorious monsters.

They are all lawless individuals.

[I need to contact the other side as soon as possible. If I wait a few more days, who knows, she might even be pregnant!]

Based on the interest shown by Luffy towards the Empress during the journey, Mozambica had no doubt about this possibility.

"Wait, let me think of a solution, this won't do!"

At this moment, the sound of a Den Den Mushi suddenly rang out.

Sandersonia's expression froze, and she quickly answered the call.

On the other end was the dignified voice of her elder sister:

"I have no business with them. Return."

"Elder sister!"

Everyone was overjoyed, and in an instant, they forgot about Mozambica and happily turned back.

Watching these ferocious women leave, Mozambica couldn't help but breathe a sigh of relief.

"What on earth happened? Mr. Garp, your grandson really knows how to cause trouble."

Amazon Lily, Snake Castle, The Palace.

The Emperor's dining hall.

Luffy sat in the guest's seat and was warmly welcomed.

A table full of sumptuous food was laid out.

The palace servants kept bringing out delicious food and wine.

Across from him was a short old lady standing on a chair, just to be able to meet his gaze.

"I am Elder Nyon, why did you kidnap our Snake Princess, Monkey D.

Luffy?"

If it was because he was attracted to Snake Princess, it would make sense.

men who wants to snatch her back and make her his wife is uncountable in the Grand Line.

But to successfully snatch her away and then safely return her was truly unexpected.

What's even more crucial is that the girl's attitude suddenly did a complete 180-degree turn. The big block of ice who used to despise men now demands warm hospitality from the man who kidnapped her.

"In fact, I have already accomplished my goal. The Empress is already pregnant, so I brought her back to take care of the baby." Luffy seriously spouted some nonsense.

Elder Nyon was thunderstruck, and the servants responsible for entertaining them all widened their eyes.

"What? Is Princess Hime really pregnant?"

"That's great! We'll have a little Snake Princess in ten months!"

"We must tell everyone about this happy news!"

Luffy: "..."

Why do these women have such strange thought processes?

Shouldn't they be angry?

Why are they so happy!?

"What's so good about it!" Elder Nyon tapped her snake-headed cane, speechless at these unreasonable little girls:

"Pregnancy isn't that easy. It's not that quick. Many people try hundreds of times and still might not succeed. Monkey D. Luffy, if you have such a foolproof ability, I would like to keep you on Daughter Island permanently to contribute to this country!"

Luffy: "..."

Your thought process, Elder Nyon, is also very abnormal.

No wonder this is the country of women, it can't be understood with common sense at all.

After seriously imagining that terrifying scene for a moment, he immediately laughed awkwardly: "Sorry, the Joke was not very funny."

The palace, the large bath.

The Empress, completely naked, with half of her body submerged in the water.

She lifted her long hair and anxiously asked her sister.

"Is there any left? Will there be a little bit left? Luffy said there's still a little bit left."

"No! Completely gone! Nee-Sama"

"That bad man is deceiving you, Nee-sama, The hoof of the Celestial Dragons is really gone, as if it never appeared!"

The two sisters said with shocked expressions on their faces.

Confirming once again, the Empress shed tears of joy.

She quickly wiped away the tears from the corners of her eyes and turned to reprimand her two sisters:

"Luffy is my benefactor, you should address him as 'Sama' and not be disrespectful."

The two sisters:

"It hasn't even been three hours since they met, and Nee-Sama's attitude has changed so quickly."

Sandersonia smiled bitterly and said, "Understood, Nee-Sama. Luffy Sama is currently in the dining hall."

What kind of aphrodisiac did that bad man give to Onee Sama?

They knew their elder sister's personality too well, but they didn't expect her to have this side too.

"I should personally attend to him."

Saying so, the Empress walked out of the bath.

Marigold immediately took out a bathrobe.

The Empress whispered again, "Marigold, Sandersonia, fruit that Luffy gave me, there must still be some left. I will definitely obtain two for you soon, and you both will recover as well."

"That kind of precious thing will surely come at a great cost, Nee-Sama, you don't need to consider us."

Sandersonia shook her head and smiled, "Being able to see Nee-Sama return to her perfect self, I am already satisfied."

"Yes, that bad man must have ill intentions towards Nee-Sama" Marigold said with a serious expression.

"Marie, don't call him that, it's too disrespectful."

The Empress shook her head, but she was still seriously considering how to ask Luffy to obtain two healing fruits.

Previously, he said "not now," which means there might be in the future.

Of course, it's also possible that it was just an excuse.

"Nee-Sama, you must not be deceived by that bad man!" Marigold insisted on her position, worried.

"Hmph~ Rest assured, I won't beg and wag my tail for a man."

The empress dressed herself in fine clothes and smiled lightly.

Not long after, the three sisters arrived at the dining hall.

The empress stepped forward eagerly, perhaps having just finished bathing, there was a slight rosy glow on her face.

"Luffy~ Does the food here suit your taste?"

Marigold: (●_●)

"Your Highness, would you like to hear yourself?! When did your tone become so docile and gentle?"

"It's very good. This world is really good, with each civilization developing its own unique cuisine.

Luffy smiled contentedly.

As a half-foodie, he sailed all the way here, satisfied with the various delicacies along the way.

Especially the food in Amazon Lily, it gives him a sense of familiarity.

Even buns are available!

"Is that so? As long as you're satisfied."

The empress nodded and then saw Elder Nyon, her eyebrows suddenly frowned: "Elder Nyon...! What are you doing here?"

"What's with this tone!?"

Elder Nyon couldn't hold back, being so friendly with a man she had only known for three hours, yet treating her with such hostility.

"Hm, there's nothing to say to a traitor. Get out of my palace." The empress snorted.

Marigold behind her breathed a sigh of relief.

Thank goodness, thank goodness.

Nee-Sama is still the same Empress, the one with the problem is not her.

It must be this bad man.

She silently glared at Luffy.

"Snake Princess, you wretch, don't you remember it was me who brought you three sisters back then!" Elder Nyon transformed into a shark's mouth.

"A small favor, yet you keep mentioning it. Hmph, someone, take her away!"

"Wait, Snake Princess! I've already learned from this man's mouth that the Naval Headquarters warship is parked overseas. Why don't you accept the mandatory summons!"

Elder Nyon was being supported by two servants, shouting loudly: "This time, the government is serious! If you don't go, they will definitely strip you of your title. Without the Shichibukai's title, this country will become an ordinary pirate country and be dragged into the war!"

Long-winded reprimands, although reasonable, still caused the Empress to bite her lip, her expression filled with dissatisfaction.

"I hate the government, you know that, right? I won't join the Marines"

"Don't be so stubborn, Snake Princess!"

"Hmph~ What about my stubbornness? No matter what choices I make, everyone will forgive me because I am too beautiful!"

The Empress pointed her finger at her stepmother, looking down arrogantly.

Because of looking down too much, it ended up being a posture of looking up at the sky.

"I forgive you~ I forgive you~"

The stepmother, who was accidentally charmed by the Devil Fruit, had

hearts in her eyes.

But in the next moment, she reacted and scolded angrily:

"I almost fell for it! Snake Princess! When did you become such a cold and heartless woman? I don't remember raising you like this!"

"Hahaha."

Luffy couldn't help but burst into laughter, finding it extremely amusing.

This mother and daughter... or more accurately, the stepmother who could barely be considered a mother, and the relationship between her and the Empress, made him laugh.

"Luffy?" The Empress blinked her eyes and hurriedly said, "I...I am really sorry for making you laugh."

No, it's nothing. I just think it's best for you to go, the government's 'plan' is almost complete. Honestly, if you don't go, your title will soon be stripped away.

Luffy suppressed his laughter and shook his head.

The Pacifist plan is also nearing its final stage.

The necessary genes have already been obtained, and those humanoid weapons cannot be created within the two years. It is more likely that this plan has existed since the birth of the Shichibukai system.

"And besides, you are free now, you don't have any restraints. You don't have to live in the past."

"Luffy~ You're right. Since that's the case, I'll go."

Even though she didn't know about the Pacifist's plan, the Empress nodded seriously.

Elder Nyon:(☉_☉)

Sandersonia: (●_●)

[Nee-Sama, don't be deceived by this bad man.] Marigold shouted in her heart.

Chapter 96 Heroes Gather, Seven

Warlords Of The Sea Round Table

Conference!

Elder Nyon is very hurt.

Her own advice is not as effective as a single word from a wild man.

She can't help but suspect, could it be this girl, Snake Princess, really got involved with this man.

Could the previous words about pregnancy be true?

But, this is not very important either. It doesn't matter who Snake Princess likes, and even if she were to follow her example and leave the country, it is not a problem to consider now. The urgent matter at hand is to attend the Shichibukai meeting.

Elder Nyon broke free from the restraints of two servants and decisively said,

"Snake Princess, since you have made your decision, then go quickly!"

"Wait a few more days, there's no rush," Luffy shook his head.

If he doesn't make the Vice-Admiral wait a little longer, how can he show his hard work and highlight his achievements?

At this moment, the Empress suddenly asked,

"Luffy, you said before that your father is the leader of the Revolutionary Army, why are you..."

"Why did I become a Shichibukai?"

Luffy smiled and said, "'Fire Fist' Ace is my adopted brother, I just happened to use this chance to save him once.

That was the initial purpose.

But then the Adventure Store appeared with things like the 'Blank Fruit'.

For the Summit War, he had to go.

A powerful Devil Fruit like the Shock Fruit, anyone with a brain wouldn't

refuse it.

As for whether Whitebeard will die, as long as he doesn't intervene to save Whitebeard, the probability is that he will die.

But why would he want to save him?

He has no relationship with Whitebeard, they haven't even met.

On the contrary, it would be more advantageous for him if Whitebeard died early instead of wasting everyone's energy.

Perhaps he could take the opportunity to swallow up the Whitebeard Pirates, or if he can't, Ace would take over and become the new captain of the Whitebeard Pirates.

It's all about self-interest.

Indeed, he is a bad man.

Luffy thought to himself.

"Is Ace your brother?" the Empress exclaimed in astonishment.

The focus of the others, however, was different.

Elder Nyon fully shocked, said, "The leader of the Revolutionary Army, Dragon, is your father?!"

"My grandfather is Garp, as long as he's not lying, then it's true. I haven't even seen my father's face."

Luffy also casually mentioned the most frequently used background, enjoying the feeling of a young master .

Elder Nyon was completely dumbfounded.

This kid has such a deep background!

"No wonder your previous bounty poster requested you to be captured alive..."

Now, Elder Nyon finally understood why Snake Princess's attitude towards him was completely different.

Dragon, the revolutionary, is a man who wants to overthrow the Celestial

Dragons, and he has indeed become a great trouble for the government.

It's only natural for his son to be favored by Snake Princess.

Next, this "Elder Nyon" began to subtly inquire Luffy about various questions.

Such as, his relationship with his father, does the government know?

And so on.

Luffy also casually answered.

In the blink of an eye, it was the third day.

After being warmly entertained, Luffy set sail for headquarters with the Empress on a warship.

The Nine Snake Pirates came to bid farewell.

I don't know who spread it, but the news of the Empress's pregnancy, which Luffy casually joked about a few days ago, spread like wildfire.

The entire Nine Snake Pirates knew, and each and every one of them was delighted, eagerly anticipating the birth of the baby in ten months.

Even Marigold, who was very wary of Luffy, showed a pleased attitude towards her sister's pregnancy.

Only the Empress herself seemed to be unaware.

At this moment, a group of female pirates stood on the deck, waving their hands.

"Bon voyage, Empress!"

"Luffy Sama, take care~"

"May you return safely, Princess Hime"

In front of others, the Empress still maintained her proud demeanor.

"Are you called Mozambique? I have accepted the government's summons.

Why haven't you set sail yet? How long do you want Luffy to wait?"

Mozambique stared in astonishment at this scene.(ô□ô)

Why has her attitude changed so suddenly in such a short time?

He instinctively looked at Luffy.

Luffy laughed and patted his shoulder.

"No need to thank me too much."

Mozambia looked at him, then at the Empress's expression, and couldn't help but give a thumbs up in his heart.

Amazing!

Although he didn't know exactly what had happened, the Empress's change in attitude must be because of Luffy Sama.

"Empress Boa Hancock, please release the soldiers from their petrification."

In response, the Empress just snorted and blew air towards the numerous stone statues. Afterwards, everything returned to normal.

The soldiers had no memory of being petrified, their thoughts frozen in that moment.

"You fools, hurry up and prepare to return!"

Wushe scolded loudly.

The silent marines began to move.

Because there was still plenty of time, the return of the warships was not urgent and they did not travel at full speed.

But the warships themselves were faster than ordinary ships.

Therefore, on the tenth day, they arrived at Marineford, the Marine Headquarters.

[You have arrived at the new island, Marineford. Reward: 1000 adventure coins.]

[You have sailed in the Sea of Paradise for 10 days. Reward: 1000 adventure coins.]

In addition to these two regular rewards,

During these days, the crew members from the Seven Water Capital

learned a total of 14 techniques and gained a total of 2800 adventure coins.

Sanji and Bartolomeo also became the fourth and fifth members to fully master the techniques.

Of course, money comes quickly and goes quickly.

In these ten days, Luffy refreshed the shop four times every day and finally managed to obtain the second "Blank Fruit" before arriving at Marineford.

In addition to the Blank Fruit, he also bought a box of Haki Fruit, two boxes of Six-Style Fruit, and a Self-Healing Fruit.

[Adventure Coins]: 23945

[Adventure Warehouse]: 5 Haki Fruits, 18 Six-Style Fruits, 3 Lifespan Fruits, 1 Self-Healing Fruit, 1 Blank Fruit

The warship sailed into the bay of Naval Headquarters.

Luffy and Empress Hancock disembarked one after another. The marines responsible for reporting at the port immediately shouted into the Den Den Mushi, "Naval Headquarters, Second Harbor of Marineford, reporting that the Seven Warlords of the Sea, Monkey D. Luffy-sama and Boa Hancock-sama, have arrived at the port!"

On the pier, numerous Marine officers wearing the cloak of justice stood solemnly on both sides.

After seeing Luffy and Empress Hancock, they all saluted in unison.

"Hehe, Marines bowing to pirates, the word 'justice' is really....," Luffy chuckled.

"Do you not like this kind of welcome?" Mozambica made a gesture of invitation. "Please follow me, I will take you to the rest room at Headquarters."

They walked in silence.

The arrival of the two Shichibukai did cause some busyness at Headquarters.

This was Luffy's first time coming to Marineford Island.

After coming down from the port, they were greeted by the Execution Plaza, and the execution platform had already been set up.

Behind the execution platform, after passing through the towering walls engraved with the words "justice," was the Headquarters fortress.

They went up the stairs and, led by the Vice Admiral, arrived at a spacious rest room.

They opened the door and entered.

Everyone in the rest room looked over in unison.

There were a total of four people.

All of them were Shichibukai!

"Furfurfuru... Have the last two also arrived?"

Donquixote Doflamingo, currently the king of Dressrosa, with an original bounty of 340 million berries!

Sitting on the sofa, crossing his legs, silently flipping through a book, a man who looks like a bear, with an expressionless face, cast his gaze.

Bartholemew Kuma, former king of the Sorbet Kingdom, former bounty of 294 million berries!

"Meeting again, Monkey D. Luffy."

Hawkeye leaned against the back of the chair, legs resting on the table, with his black sword, Yoru, by his side.

Dracule Mihawk, the world's greatest swordsman, former Marine hunter, currently one of the Seven Warlords of the Sea, former bounty...

"Kishishishi... it's you, the rookie who defeated the Sand Crocodile, doesn't look like much."

A man with a nearly 7-meter tall body, with a head of fiery onion-like

hair, laughed with a terrifying and grotesque sound.

Geko Moria, captain of the Thriller Bark, former bounty of 320 million berries!

The focus of everyone's attention is Luffy, not the Empress.

"The last two?" Luffy chuckled and walked into the room.

"Jinbei is in prison," Kuma answered in a indifferent voice.

"That guy doesn't understand anything, knowing that he would have to attack the Whitebeard Pirates, but he refused to participate despite receiving some favors, Furfurfurfu... the fishmen's brains are surely underdeveloped," Doflamingo mocked.

Luffy disdainfully glanced at the other person.

He's the hero who dared to say "mere Four Emperors" in front of Big Mom.

You're become a dog in front of Kaido, yet you have the nerve to mock Jinbei?

He sat down opposite Hawkeye.

The Empress frowned slightly, displeased to be in a room with a group of men.

She sat down on Luffy's left side, silently, ignoring all the men as air.

Hmm, except for Luffy.

At this moment, the squirrel spoke helplessly:

"Could you all calm down a bit? This is the Naval Headquarters. Now that everyone is here, I'll go inform..."

Before he could finish speaking, laughter filled the air.

Then, Garp walked in with big strides, holding a bag of senbei in his hand.

"Luffy, you're here."

"...Grandpa."

"I heard that you kidnapped the Empress of the Daughter Island. Hahaha, you truly are my grandson!"

He laughed heartily and his gaze fell upon the empress, causing him to mutter to himself.

[This brat doesn't resemble his father or me, but he certainly knows how to handle women. He used to be a clueless fool.]

However, he doesn't oppose this kind of thing, and is even quite proud of it.

It would be best if he had more great-grandchildren, so that when he retires, he can become a Great Grandfather of Love.

Upon seeing Garp's arrival, the Shichibukai in the room all turned their attention to the empress.

Is this some interesting information?

"You Kid, come with me."

Garp walked up to Luffy and handed the empress a half-eaten bag of senbei, laughing, "I'm taking your person away. Here, Hancock, this is for you."

The empress didn't know how to react and looked blankly at the senbei on the table.

"Grandpa, you have some nerve," Luffy said speechlessly.

"Come here, I have something to ask you."

Garp turned and left, and seeing this, Luffy immediately got up and followed.

The two of them arrived at Garp's Vice Admiral office.

Luffy naturally knew what Garp wanted to ask.

It had been quite some time since they last met in Logue Town, and Luffy figured that Garp must have looked into the matter of the Rubber Fruit.

"Luffy, about your-"

Before he could finish, Luffy interrupted and asked, "Grandpa, how did the Marines know that Ace is Roger's son?"

Garp was at a loss for words, his mind froze.

After a long while, he sighed and said,

About two years ago, that idiot Ace made a name for himself in the Grand Line as the captain of the Spade Pirates, Fire Fist Ace. The government had already started paying attention to this name."

"Portgas D. Ace, the problem lies in his surname. The government immediately began investigating what happened 20 years ago."

"There was a pregnant woman named Portgas D. Rouge on an island in the South Blue called Baterilla. With the thorough investigation by the CP organization, this matter was easily uncovered."

Garp never mentioned this to Luffy.

At this point, he went into detail, and his tone gradually became heavy.

Facing Sengoku's questioning, Garp couldn't hide it because once the connection was discovered, everything would be easy to investigate.

The government simply didn't realize that Ace wasn't born after ten months of pregnancy.

When comparing Ace's surname with Rouge's, combined with Ace's birthplace, the answer became apparent.

Sengoku's questioning of Garp was just going through the motions.

At that time, the government had already confirmed that Ace was Roger's
bloodline!

"Two years ago... Wasn't the government inviting Ace to become a Shichibukai?" Luffy said in surprise.

"It was a trap."

Garp shook his head, grinned, and stared at his own grandson. "Do you want to save Ace?"

Luffy decisively denied it. "Ace said he has his own adventure. I am a Shichibukai, a perfect example of a Shichibukai. When the Vice Admiral invited the Empress, I helped a lot."

"Hahaha, Sengoku knows about this too. He even praised you," Garp laughed heartily, knowing Luffy's temperament too well and not exposing him.

"They don't know about my relationship with Ace?" Luffy found it a bit strange.

In theory, they should know, right?

They just didn't investigate?

But that's unreasonable. Sengoku knew that Ace was adopted by Garp.

There's no reason not to continue investigating.

As long as they continue to investigate, they will soon know that Ace and I know each other well and have a good relationship.

As for the fact that we are closer than blood brothers, it would be difficult to find out unless we voluntarily disclose it.

Garp raised his fist, wanting to beat his grandson as usual, but quickly gave up.

"You've grown up too. It's not appropriate to beat you up anymore."

Luffy: "..."

You can't beat me anymore, you old Man

"Hahaha, I know. At least Sengoku knows that you teamed up with Ace in Alabasta to defeat Crocodile.

Garp sat down on his own sofa and poured himself a cup of tea. 'But no one knows about your brotherhood. So, do whatever you want.'

Marine's position prevents Garp from taking any action.

Similarly, Grandpa's position also prevents him from stopping Luffy.

In that case, let's follow fate!

'That's what you said.'

'You Kid, so you really want to save that idiot Ace!'

...This doesn't make sense, Grandpa, you're playing dirty!

Hahaha, it's up to you.' Garp laughed twice and then his expression turned serious. 'About your Devil Fruit...'

'Grandpa, do you really want to know? It will only make you more miserable.'

'Don't talk nonsense. As a grandfather, I have the right to know about my own grandson's matters, right?'

Upon hearing this, Luffy grinned.

'Then I'll tell you.'

Shortly after.

Naval Headquarters, conference room.

Six Shichibukai sat around a round table.

Several Rear Admirals stood guard around them.

In a solemn atmosphere, the current Fleet Admiral of the Marines, Sengoku the Buddha, walked in with a firm step.

Accompanying him were Vice Admiral Tsuru, the Chief of Staff, and Marine hero Garp.

'Oh my, sorry for the late greeting. I didn't expect you all to actually come.'

Sengoku sat down with a smile on his face. 'It's rare to see so many heroes of the sea gathered together... No, I should say, it's a gathering of sea scums.'

'Furfurfur... Thank you for the compliment.' Doflamingo smirked.

Sengoku's smile disappeared, and he spoke in a low voice.

'So, let's begin the round table meeting!'

Chapter 97 Action Of The Four

Emperors, The Upcoming Summit

War!

Shichibukai Round Table Meeting.

When Sengoku, Tsuru, and Garp appeared, the Rear Admirals stationed around the room all withdrew.

"Well then, let's begin the Round Table Meeting."

With Sengoku's words,

The door closed tightly, the curtains fell, and the room became dim.

Then, a slit opened in the center of the round table, and a Den Den Mushi slowly lifted up.

It had big eyes and projected two beams of light, which reflected on the projection cloth on the side of the round table.

It was the intelligence data of the Whitebeard Pirates.

At the top were two side-by-side portraits, Ace and Whitebeard.

Below them were the captains of the Whitebeard Pirates and the estimated number of pirates in each division.

Below the division captains were the 43 New World pirate crews affiliated with the Whitebeard Pirates.

Everyone turned their gaze to the situation on the projection cloth, including the Empress.

Sengoku said solemnly,

"This is our target. The Whitebeard Pirates, with 1600 pirates as their core, along with their 43 affiliated pirate crews, totaling over 50,000 people!"

Upon hearing this, the expressions of the Shichibukai varied.

Moria grinned, "Kishishishi, a true Summit War. There must be lots of dead people...."

This was also the reason why he willingly came to participate in the war,

not just because of the mandatory summons.

His devil fruit ability, had the power to create undead zombies from corpses!

And the Summit War was clearly a bloody battlefield that would soon give birth to countless corpses.

"Furfurfurfur... Will so many people really come?"

"They will."

Crane, the Vice Admiral, glanced at Doflamingo indifferently, clasping her hands together, and said, "The Whitebeard Pirates, located deep in the New World, have already disappeared. All of our Marine surveillance ships have been sunk. At the same time, the 43 pirate crews under Whitebeard's command have also begun their actions.

The New World is not within Marine's sphere of influence.

Compared to the Paradise Sea, Marine has very little control over the New World, which is the sea area ruled by the Four Emperors.

In most cases, Marine can only rely on surveillance ships to monitor the movements of the Four Emperors.

And every time the Four Emperors take action, the surveillance ships are always the first to suffer.

"The enemy has over 50,000 people, what about us?" Doflamingo smirked.

"We have 100,000 elite Marines from major branches around the world, over 2,000 school-level officers, 60 Rear Admirals, several Vice Admirals from headquarters, three Marine Admirals, and 30 mass-produced humanoid weapons called 'Pacifistas.' And finally... it's you guys," Vice Admiral Crane scanned the six Shichibukai present with a calm tone.

Sengoku continued, "Whether it's the quantity of forces or the comparison of high-end combat power, we have an absolute advantage. This is a war

that cannot be allowed to fail!"

Upon hearing this, none of the Warlords responded.

Hawk-Eye's goal was simply to measure the gap between himself and "the world's strongest man," Whitebeard.

Moriah was solely interested in his zombie army.

The other... is a Revolutionary Army officer.

Doflamingo simply wanted to witness history.

Luffy was preparing to turn the tables and save people, while also hoping to get his hands on a Shock Fruit.

The Empress, because of Luffy, followed along without any real interest in listening to the battle plan being discussed at the moment.

This is what it means to be a Shichibukai!

Luffy, who had the idea among those present, couldn't help but laugh.

"What are you laughing at, Monkey D. Luffy?" Sengoku frowned.

"Justice will prevail."

Luffy picked up a banana from the table and casually peeled it.

"Furfurfur... Justice will prevail?" Doflamingo also laughed, as if he had heard a good joke. Then he said,

"I say, Marshal Sengoku, why are you so sure that Whitebeard will come, even if he is the captain of the second division? Is there something about this that we don't know?"

Interrupted by him, Sengoku's attention was diverted.

"About the lineage of Fire Fist Ace, there are still some of you who don't know. It doesn't hurt to tell you later."

After a pause, he said with a serious expression, "There are three objectives for this war!"

The objectives of the operation!

First: Kill Four Emperors Whitebeard, as the legendary pirate, after

Roger's death, he became a figure like a benchmark for pirates.

Whitebeard must die!

Second: Publicly execute "Fire Fist" Ace and broadcast it to the world.

Third: Annihilate as many core members of the Whitebeard Pirates, about 1600, and eliminate as many as possible of the 43 affiliated pirate crews that have come to join the battle.

These three objectives have different priorities.

Completing the first one means small victory!

Completing the second one means a huge victory!

Achieving all three objectives means complete victory for the Marines!

"Killing Whitebeard takes priority over executing Ace?" Luffy opened his mouth slightly in surprise.

"Ace is just bait, Straw Hat Luffy."

Vice Admiral Crane's attitude towards Luffy is slightly more friendly than towards the other Shichibukai.

With a slight smile, he said, "Do you know Fire Fist Ace?"

"I know him. We met in Alabasta. He wanted to invite me to join the Whitebeard Pirates. It's a funny idea. Who wants to go and be someone's son?"

Luffy replied seriously, "At that time, he seemed to be chasing someone in Alabasta, someone named Blackbeard."

"He's the traitor on Whitebeard's ship."

Vice Admiral Crane shook his head. "I've never heard of this person before. He must have some strength to be able to escape from Fire Fist Ace's pursuit for so long."

Hmm?

Where did Blackbeard go?

Even Luffy is a bit confused now.

The Summit War is about to begin. What is Blackbeard doing?

Do something, Blackbeard!

In the Summit War, he was almost killed by Akainu.

The others are all a bunch of useless bugs, just slacking off!

Of course, he himself is also slacking off.

"Put aside the unnecessary nonsense for now!"

Sengoku shook his head, pressed the button in his hand, and suddenly, the image on the projection screen switched to the execution platform in front of the bay.

"Next, we will discuss the detailed battle plan. Listen carefully, all of you.

In this war, you are all indispensable forces!"

...

Meanwhile, the Shichibukai were holding a roundtable meeting.

...

The New World was also experiencing a great disturbance.

...

The disappearance of the Whitebeard Pirates, one of the Four Emperors, ignited the flames of war in the once peaceful sea.

...

With Whitebeard's movement, the other three Emperors also began their actions!

...

It's like a board game, where one move affects the whole body.

...

Wanokuni, the surrounded island.

...

Dozens of massive pirate ships were loading military supplies at the port.

Cannons and firearms were being carried onto the deck, box by box.

...

"Hurry up! Hurry up! It's Kaido's order. The expedition is about to begin!"

...

"The target of the expedition is the territory ruled by that old man,
Whitebeard!"

...

"This is a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity. While the Naval Headquarters is about to go to war with Whitebeard, and while Whitebeard is leaving the New World, we will swallow up all the islands protected by Whitebeard's name in one go!"

...

"Oooooohhh"

...

The pirates were extremely excited.

...

Beside the port.

...

A tall woman wearing a red demon mask stood quietly.

...

"Kaido is going to attack Whitebeard's territory?" she murmured to herself, her hands shackled.

...

"Princess Yamato, please return to the castle!"

...

The person speaking was a young man.

...

One of the Beast Pirates executives, one of the Six Tobiropo.

...

"Don't order me around. Yamato really wants to sneak onto the ship, but when she lowered her head and saw the shackles on her wrist, she immediately lost her spirit.

...

As Yamato's father, Kaido put explosive handcuffs on her to prevent her from escaping once she leaves Onigashima.

...

Can there really be such a father in the world?

...

Ordinary people might find it unbelievable, but Yamato is used to it.

"Is Ace going to be executed?"

Thinking to herself, Yamato turned around and headed back to Skull Castle.

Coming towards him was Kaido, followed by three big shots.

"Kaido" Yamato's eyes sharpened.

"Ohohoho..." Kaido, holding a jug of wine, looked drunk and smiled when he saw his daughter. "While I'm away on my expedition, you better behave yourself, Yamato."

Yamato:....

There's nothing to say to this person.

Ignoring him, she left straight away.

Kaido didn't mind either. He was used to his foolish daughter.

Daughter?

Oh, she started calling herself a man a long time ago.

Why did I have such a foolish daughter who admires the idiot Kozuki

Oden?

Kaido, who was already 57 years old and in his middle age, was also very troubled.

New World, a sea area.

The pirate ship named "The Red Force" was sailing against the wind, heading towards Wano Country.

It proudly flew the Four Emperor's Red Hair Pirates flag.

On the deck.

"Beckman, just as you guessed, Kaido is indeed making a move!" Yasopp looked at the received information and grinned.

"That guy wouldn't miss this opportunity." Beckman, with a cigarette in his mouth, looked at his captain.

Red Hair's face turned serious and said, "Stop Kaido first, then... stop the war!"

"It might not be in time, Shanks. Fighting against the Beasts Pirates won't be over in a short time."

"It's okay, we have time."

Shanks smiled, picked up Luffy's "expired bounty poster," and said, "If his brother is being executed, Luffy won't stay silent."

"Luffy?" Beckman recalled the child he had seen ten years ago and couldn't help but smile. "He became a Shichibukai, which is truly unexpected. But given the current situation, his role as a Shichibukai will be very useful, its almost like... he can see the future."

"See the future?" Shanks pondered.

Considering Luffy's personality, it is indeed unbelievable that he would become a Shichibukai.

"We will meet soon! For now, let's deal with Kaido's issue. Get ready for battle, and once we defeat Kaido, we will go see Luffy!"

"Oh!"

Cake Island.

Big Mom also received information about the actions of the other three

Four Emperors.

"Mamamama... Whitebeard disappeared? Kaido is going on an expedition to take over Whitebeard's territory? And that brat Red Hair went to intercept?"

Charlotte Linlin sneered.

It's been a long time since something interesting like this happened.

"Mom, should we get involved too?"

"Yes, Katakuri, take your men and seize the Fish-Men Island!"

Charlotte Linlin narrowed her eyes, opened her bloodthirsty mouth, and licked her lips. "Whitebeard is done for. The fire-fist Ace, must be a bait thrown out by the Marines. Now that the Fish-Men Island, protected by Whitebeard, will soon have its power vacated, that place is an important gateway!"

Power doesn't disappear nor appear out of thin air.

It only shifts from one place to another.

Katakuri, who received the order, immediately took command.

Impel Down.

Level 1, Crimson Hell.

A hidden prison somewhere.

Several jailers brought in a sumptuous meal and delivered it to the cell.

Blackbeard and his three subordinates were leisurely eating.

Buggy, on the side, twitched his mouth, finding the scene in front of him absurd.

It seems that Laffitte, dressed in prisoner's clothing, noticed that he had something to say and smiled as he spoke:

"Just a little Hypnosis technique, making you laugh."

What kind of Hypnosis technique has such power?

Buggy cautiously picked up a piece of bread and took a bite:

"Blackbeard, how long do we have to stay here? I don't want to spend a second longer in this place! When does the escape plan start?"

"Zehahaha... Buggy, you've become a Devil Fruit user too. The Marines are truly useless, not even knowing this. The handcuffs they put on you are just ordinary. Even without me, you could still escape."

"You too!"

Buggy's eyes were cunning.

Blackbeard, this guy, is also a Devil Fruit user. The darkness overflowing from his palm easily destroyed the handcuffs.

Before, when Blackbeard proposed cooperation, Buggy quickly agreed.

Even without Blackbeard, he had his own escape plan, but teaming up with Blackbeard would greatly increase the chances of success.

However, it had been so many days and there had been no action, which made him very dissatisfied.

"Don't worry, you saw it before too. Fire Fist Ace was captured. The Marines are going to publicly execute Ace. There are ten warships parked outside the prison now. It's not a good time for escaping."

Blackbeard ate heartily, mumbling incoherently.

As for how Ace was captured by the Marines, he was not surprised at all.

Once upon a time, he used to call Ace his captain. After he betrayed and fled, Ace came to kill him and ended up being captured by the Marines. It served him right.

"Zehahaha, Whitebeard pops will definitely come. The war is about to break out soon, and that's when our chance will come!"

Blackbeard took a sip of the cheap rum and laughed, "By then, we'll split up. You cause a commotion on the first floor of the prison, and we'll go to the sixth floor!"

"Huh? What are you planning to do?"

"The prisoners on the sixth floor are all monsters!"

Blackbeard squinted his eyes and grinned, "Release those monsters and select a few qualified individuals to join us. That's my goal!"

When he encountered Aokiji at sea, he was indeed taken aback.

In that situation, it was impossible to defeat Aokiji. The Devil Fruit of the Marine Admiral is Ice fruit.

In the battle at sea, the enemy had an absolute advantage.

Therefore, Blackbeard didn't put up much resistance and was easily defeated by the enemy.

As expected, he was then sent to this prison.

"Sometimes, one can't help but marvel at fate, hahaha... Meeting you here, Buggy, is also a sign of some kind of fate!"

Underground Level Six, Eternal Hell.

Ace and Jinbei were imprisoned in the same cell.

"Ace, no matter what, I will do everything in my power to save you!"

"Don't bother, Jinbei. I still remember vividly how you almost killed me."

Ace was covered in injuries, his hands hanging from the wall, his voice sounding very weak.

Jinbei, the fat blue guy, tried to struggle but couldn't break free from the chains:

"Nowadays, Fish-Men Island is also protected by Whitebeard, and there are countless islands in the New World flying Whitebeard's flag. If the Marines were to go to war with Whitebeard and that man were to die, the world would descend into complete chaos."

Upon hearing this, Ace fell silent.

"Ace, I absolutely have to prevent this!"

Ace remembered their encounter in Alabasta.

Luffy warned him not to go after Blackbeard because he couldn't win.

But he still went, seeking the assistance of an information broker to find Blackbeard's whereabouts.

Just because of that, he was betrayed by the information broker and then got targeted by Aokiji.

Facing a Marine Admiral, he couldn't escape at all and ended up in this situation.

It was all his own fault!

Ace could accept the consequences he brought upon himself, but he couldn't accept the fact that it implicated Whitebeard's pirate crew.

"Hahahaha... Do you want me to help you guys?"

Suddenly, a low laughter came from the cell opposite.

Jinbei turned to look: "As a fellow prisoner, how can you help us?"

"Jinbei, unlike a brainless fool like you, if I want to leave, I can do it anytime."

Emerging from the shadows, gradually revealing his figure, was none other than the former Shichibukai, Crocodile.

Chapter 98 Luffy: I Have No

Choice But To Replace Them And

Ascend The Throne!

Naval Headquarters, Lounge.

The round table is over.

At this time, Luffy was sitting at a square table, playing cards with the other Shichibukai.

Throwing a pair of 3s casually, while complaining:

"It's still a week before the execution day, so why don't we just play cards here?"

Next home on his right hand side, is Moria.

He looked at the cards in his hand with a displeased face, hesitated for a

long time, and still made a pair of 8s:

"It's really boring, can't you prepare a little sideshow? Marine!"

The colonel behind him was speechless: "The cafeteria is preparing dinner, please wait a moment.

It is the turn of the person opposite Luffy to play.

Doflamingo crossed his legs, sat obliquely on the chair, raised his five fingers of his right hand slightly, and a deck of cards was suspended in front of the table out of thin air.

Played a pair.

"Furfurfur... If you're bored, why don't you go outside with me? Monkey

D. Luffy, I'm very interested in you."

Finally it was Hawkeye's turn.

He dropped a pair of Aces blankly.

Lu glanced at the person opposite, and said softly: "I'm afraid I'll kill you, it won't be good since the war starts in a week.

The cards in his hand were really bad, so he pulled the colonel beside him over, stood up himself, and handed the cards to the person.

"Come on, I'll go for a walk, if you lose, I'll throw you into the sea to feed the fish."

"Eh!?"

The Colonel was dumbfounded.

With a bad deck of cards, it's already doomed, or not to play.

Ignoring the game of cards, Luffy glanced at the room, the empress was standing by the window, being a beautiful girl alone.

This girl really doesn't like to stay in the same room with men, and she exudes an aura that strangers should not enter.

Luffy didn't bother her, and walked out of the lounge.

Outside the door, Bartholemew Kuma was sitting on the partition wall of

the corridor, holding a thick tome in his hand, reading quietly by himself.

Luffy walked over. "what the..."

"It's noisy, what's going on at the port?"

Looking at the inner bay port from the height of the headquarters building, you can see many people boarding the ship.

Kuma said softly, "It's the family members of the sailors who are being evacuated. They will be sent to the nearest Sabaody Archipelago for refuge."

On the island of Marineford, there is also a large town inhabited by many military families.

In response to the upcoming Summit War, non-military personnel like this will naturally withdraw from the battlefield.

"I see."

Suddenly, Luffy jumped lightly, also jumped onto the partition wall, and sat down cross-legged.

"Bartholemew Kuma, I know your identity." He smiled slightly and said softly.

"You used to be the king of the Kingdom of South Blue Sorby, and was dubbed a 'tyrant'."

The bear didn't lift its head, its eyes were still fixed on the pages of the book.

But for Luffy's conversation, he still answered seriously.

"No...let me tell you another one." Luffy grinned and lowered his voice:

"A cadre of the Revolutionary Army."

"!?"

Bear's Thousand Years of unchanging expression changed, and his pupils shrank sharply.

Luffy knows his identity?

Why?

Bear doesn't understand, but he also knows Luffy's identity.

Son of the Dragon!

Then, I heard Luffy speak in a voice that only two people could hear:

"Don't be nervous, I want to ask you one thing, to pass on a piece of information to my masked father."

Bear's hand holding the book tightened unconsciously.

This kid is too bold!

This is Naval Headquarters, how dare you talk to him in this kind of place.

Once exposed, the situation will be very dangerous!

Bear took a deep breath and was ready to fly Luffy anytime.

No matter what happens, he also wants to ensure the safety of Mr.

Dragon's son.

[Let's take pictures of the base of the Revolutionary Army... If there is something important to tell Mr. Dragon, let him say it himself.

As for myself, what will happen to me who has done such a thing, I am not sure at all.]

Thinking so, he closed the book and took off his right hand glove.

"Hey! take it easy, no one can hear you."

Luffy smiled, and his pupils shone white.

If he dared to say that, he was naturally confident that no one would hear him.

Observation Haki, which can predict the future, is maintaining it with all his strength at this time, and any possible situation cannot escape this power.

"About the enemies of the Revolutionary Army, the real masters of the World government..."

The two communicated outside the door.

No one would have imagined that in this kind of place, someone would be so bold as to discuss something unimaginable to ordinary people.

The sailors standing guard around did not notice anything.

The Shichibukai who played cards in the lounge knew nothing about it.

If anyone had to notice something, it would only be the Empress.

She has been paying attention to Luffy, and at this time, she also saw the whispering between Luffy and the bear.

Of course, she didn't use her Haki to eavesdrop.

With Luffy's Haki, she will definitely be noticed if she does this, and she doesn't want to be hated by Luffy.

...

"In short, that's it, after the war is over, you have to report the information as soon as possible.

"I see."

Bear nodded.

Although his face looked very calm, his heart was quite shocked.

This kind of incredible information, just speaking out, will shake the rule of the World government.

"sorry to bother you."

After waving his hand, Luffy jumped down, jumping from the high-rise of the headquarters.

Tell him about the king of the world, Im, and the existence of weapons for destroying the world, to his free and cheap Dad.

The reason is also very simple.

In this Summit War, his Rubber Fruit ability cannot be hidden due to probability.

At that time, he had no choice but to ask the Revolutionary Army to help

him attract some firepower from the World government, lest the Five Elders keep staring at him.

Although he himself is not afraid, his power has not yet formed, and the combat power of his subordinates is still insufficient.

In order to avoid unnecessary trouble, he can only let this masked dad suffer.

Moreover, with this information, he can be regarded as making a great contribution to the revolutionary army.

In the future, there will be fewer obstacles to succeeding to the crown prince smoothly.

Sabaody Archipelago...

This is the place where pirates go to the New World.

Starting from Cape Twins, no matter which magnetic route you choose, you will eventually encounter the insurmountable Red Line.

Therefore, the pirates who have nowhere to go will eventually gather here. After coating the ship, they will go from the bottom of the sea to The fishmen island and enter the New World.

And this day.

Families of sailors evacuated from Naval Headquarters were arranged to this island one after another.

At the same time, a small submarine named "Polar Diving" also overcame many difficulties and arrived at this relay station.

On the side hull of the submarine, a pirate flag is engraved.

A group of pirates came down from the submarine, and the residents passing by were shocked.

"It's the Heart Pirates!"

"One of the supernovas, Trafalgar Law with a bounty of 200 million Baileys!"

"Another famous rookie pirate, there are already eight bounty criminals with over 100 million dollars on this island, right?"

"This year's new pirates are much scarier than previous years!"

"The highest bounty even exceeded 300 million!"

"But the most powerful one should be that Shichibukai..."

The people exclaimed while fleeing from here.

A white bear looking human, walks on two legs, and wears an orange long-sleeved jumpsuit.

He touched his head: "Captain, everyone is talking about us."

"Leave them alone and keep up, Bepo."

Trafalgar Law walked towards the town without looking back.

"sorry...."

The white bear Bepo followed immediately, but his mouth would not stop: "But captain, if we want to go to The fish men island, we don't need to go here for coating, right? Our ship is a submarine."

"Stupid, that's 10,000 meters deep sea, the huge water pressure will crush our submarine."

Law glanced at him, feeling helpless at the IQ of his subordinates:

"Besides, coming here is not just for coating."

Not long after, a group of people came to a relatively empty square.

In the square, countless reporters gathered in front of a huge projection cloth, and Marine soldiers were debugging a few huge video phone bugs.

"found it."

Law stopped in his tracks, grinned and said, "If you're here, you can watch the live broadcast of Summit War."

The grand battle between Naval Headquarters and Four Emperors

Whitebeard, anyone who is active in this sea will be curious.

As one of the pirate supernovas, Law will naturally continue to pay

attention.

But his focus is slightly different.

Monkey D. Luffy, a rookie pirate who became famous in the same year as him, will now participate in that huge war as Shichibukai,

"D..."

Law thought to himself.

Suddenly, his eyes glanced around.

In various corners around the square, numerous supernova pirates gathered here already one step ahead of him.

"Heh, everyone seems to be very concerned about it. Let's find a suitable place too."

An outdoor cafe.

The woman with long pink hair and bright lipstick, as if she hadn't drunk water for a few days, poured cup after cup of mellow coffee into her mouth.

After drinking it, she spit it out again with a bah.

"It's terrible!"

The subordinates around all laughed wryly, how can you still drink so much?

The captain of the Bonney Pirates, "Big Stomach Girl" Jewelry Bonney, offers a bounty of 140 million Baileys!

Inside the restaurant.

The side next to the glass window.

A mafia-like man, enjoying his steak elegantly.

Captain of the Fire Tank Pirates, "Gangster" Capone Bege, with a bounty of 138 million Baileys

In front of the tavern.

boom!

There was an explosion, and the pirates walked out one after another.

The leader, with a red hedgehog head, was dissatisfied with the rotten wine provided by the tavern, and he destroyed the whole tavern.

The captain of the Kid Pirates, Eustass Kid, has a bounty of 315 million Baileys!

"How dare you bring out such a bad wine to entertain guests?"

Kid snorted coldly, the corners of his mouth drooping, and he looked up at the big screen in the distance with a cold face: "Hmph, the last stand of the remnants of the old era?"

In addition, there is a roof, an alley, beside the garbage dump, and benches in the square...

Sea Circle Calendar 1520, the newcomer pirates who went to sea in this year, and the bounty exceeds 100 million, at this moment, all gather here...

Everyone is waiting for the opening of that grand war.

Of course, it's not just the Sabaody Archipelago.

All over the world, hundreds of millions of people are watching.

A week later, there were 3 hours left before the execution time.

Naval Headquarters, Marineford.

In the square in front of Neiwana, there is no one on the execution platform, but Marine is already ready for battle.

One hundred thousand elite soldiers lined up.

Under the execution platform, the three high-backed chairs were temporarily unoccupied.

Marshal's office.

boom!

Garp hit the table heavily with his fist, saying: "is it necessary?"

Because of his punching, the green tea on the table was overturned and a

document was soaked.

Sengoku crossed his arms and faced the questioning from his former best friend, he just answered in a deep voice with no expression on his face:

"This is not a nonsense, Garp, you also know in advance. This is not simply a public execution of a pirate. As one of the parties involved in the incident, you bear a heavy responsibility!

"I mean, was Ace's execution necessary?" Garp grimaced.

"After coming so far, what are you talking about?"

Sengoku closed his eyes.

nothing to say

Garp couldn't help thinking back to what Luffy had said to him a week ago.

"My fruit is not called Rubber Fruit, it was renamed by the World government, and it is not included in the ancient Devil Fruit illustrated book..."

"Its real name is Zoan·Phantom species Nica Form. A special Devil Fruit with the name of God."

"Grandpa, once the world government finds out, not only Marine Admiral, but maybe even Celestial Dragons, the God Knights might come to kill me."

Garp, who learned everything from Luffy, was really in more pain.

"I have no choice, the only way I can live, there is only one way..."

Overthrow the Celestial Dragons, replace them, and take the throne!

[Luffy, you have also embarked on the same path as Dragon.]

Although the reasons are different, the result is the same.

Garp was completely bewildered and had no idea what to do.

Now coming to Sengoku and getting angry is just to vent his inner confusion.

"sorry....."

After leaving a sentence, Garp turned and walked out of the office.

"Garp....."

Sengoku sighed.

[Raising the blood of the One Piece King Roger privately, and doing such a rebellious thing, you can stand here safely, do you know how much this old man has said for you in front of the Five] Elders.

"Don't do unnecessary things, Garp, or I can't help it!"

Sengoku took a deep breath and picked up the phone bug.

"Be ready for everything, and inform the Three Admirals.

Walking out of the office, Garp just ran into an old friend.

"The fist of a confused person can't even break the marshal's desk? You are too weak now, tsk..

"Zhe..."

Garp was taken aback for a moment, and said: "This war does not require retired veterans like you to join the battle.

The old man who appeared in front of Garp was very energetic, with short purple hair.

He lost his right arm in a certain battle, and now he has installed a "smasher" with impressive power.

Former Marine Admiral, "Black Arm" Zephyr!

"Haha, sailors can retire, but responsibility cannot."

Zephyr patted Garp's shoulder with his left hand, grinned and said: "The old man is just here to watch the battle, if the situation is irreversible, this arm should be useful.

Although this kind of thing is unlikely to happen, after all, all the combat power of the Naval Headquarters is gathered here!"

Garp shook his head: "You don't understand the old man's troubles at all."

"Let's hear it?" Zephyr asked curiously: "You grew up watching Ace, but a pirate is a pirate after all, even though the old man doesn't approve of his execution, the sins of the parents don't need to be carried on to the next generation.

"No, it's not that kind of question. Forget it, I'm going to the front."

Garp knocked off his hands on his shoulders, and stepped towards the stairs: "You'd better go back and drink tea.

"what is the problem?"

Zephyr shook his head blankly, feeling that Garp was really preoccupied.

Under the execution platform, above the palace wall.

Shichibukai appeared successively.

Luffy took Sengoku's teapot by the way, poured himself a cup at this moment, and took a sip happily.

"Is it time to come? The strongest man in the world?"

Muttering so, observation haki spread, covering the vast sea.

The power of listening spread to the deep sea, and heard an incomparably slight sound.

"Ha, it's here!"

Chapter 99 Tear The Sky, Luffy

And Whitebeard's Tyrannical Duel

"Sure enough, it's here."

Luffy took a leisurely sip of green tea.

Doflamingo frowned: "Where?"

The front view is clear, stretching as far as the eye can see, and there is nothing on the calm sea.

"As long as the Gate of justice is still closed, how can Whitebeard invade here? Can they still fly in the sky? furfurfur..."

The corners of his mouth turned up.[How can I fight the War with you

bugs, even if the enemy may appear from under the water, how can there be no plan | What is the Marine's staff for?]

Luffy turned his head slightly, looking in the direction of the execution platform.

Ace has been brought here, kneeling there at this moment, surrounded by two executioners holding long pole swords.

Sengoku stepped up and walked over to Ace.

He has a phone bug in his palm, through which the voice can spread all over the world.

"There is an important piece of information that needs to be announced to the whole world at this moment, showing how necessary today's execution is".

Countless sea soldiers looked back at the execution platform.

Marshal Sengoku's voice was transmitted to the nearest Sabaody Archipelago through the live broadcast, and the radio wave was amplified hundreds of times in Sabaody Archipelago, transmitted to farther places, and finally to every corner of the world.

"Fire Fist Ace, your..."

Suddenly, a voice interrupted Sengoku's Voice.

"Whitebeard is here."

Luffy yelled.

Suddenly, everyone was shocked.

They all looked towards the direction of the sea, but found nothing. The weather at 9:07 in the morning did not have any sea fog, and the light was extremely bright.

Sengoku couldn't help frowning, and his Observation Haki instantly spread to the direction of the Gate of Justice, spanning several kilometers wide, but there was no gain.

"Monkey D. Luffy!"

He glared annoyed at the Shichibukai below.

Just like Garp, he is worthy of being a grandson, he can really mess around.

"Underwater." Luffy laughed, "I think your expressions are too serious, Just relax.

No one cares about what follows.

Sengoku, Garp, Crane, Three Admiral, Marine Vice Admiral, all Shichibukai.

Everyone released their Observation Haki. In an instant, countless Haki spread toward the deep sea.

"Underwater!" Sengoku's complexion changed, and he finally heard the movement of the deep sea.

Under the execution platform.

Garp was happy, and the confusion in his heart subsided a lot because of Luffy's interruption.

"Hahahahahaha, as expected of my grandson, even he's Observation Haki is so strong."

The face of Tsuru-Chan on the side turned black: "Why is this Grandson and Grandfather so bad, not serious at all"

Now the entire Marine's formation is determined by her.

More than fifty large warships circled the outside of the port in an arc, and hundreds of dual-mounted artillery on the shore, all the firepower in the formation, was aimed straight ahead.

The result now tells her that Whitebeard is at the bottom of the sea and will go straight through the fire net...

"Turn the muzzle now!"

Sengoku immediately conveyed the order, with a low tone: "It's still not

too late, Hurry up"

Kakaka.

The many artillery squads who received the order turned the huge muzzles one after another.

But even so, there are only a dozen main guns that can cover the bombardment area in the inner bay.

Ace on the execution platform stared blankly at Luffy.

"Luffy..."

He didn't know what Luffy meant by doing this, but he wouldn't doubt Luffy.

Sengoku noticed his expression, and said calmly:

"You guys know each other, are you on good terms? Are you friends?"

Ace lowered his eyes and remained silent.

Sengoku emphasized, "Despite your past interactions, now he is on the side of justice, being Garp's grandson. Unlike you, inheritor of a darker legacy, he stands on a completely different moral ground."

Sengoku attacked verbally.

His evaluation for Luffy is pretty good.

Some things were done in East Blue, but essentially good, and Colonel Marine who was killed was a damned bastard. He can ignore Akainu and he can do it to Luffy too.

Crocodile was dealt with in Alabasta, also to help the king and princess.

Although the princess was kidnapped in the end, the princess acted voluntarily.

He is not qualified to make irresponsible remarks about the two young people's love for each other.

It's just that the princess of a country ran to become a pirate, which had a bad influence. Because of this, the newspaper didn't report the matter at

all, and he suppressed it.

Later, Shichibukai received a compulsory summoning order. When a Vice Admiral was facing a difficult situation, he persuaded the empress again, and soon came to help.

He had no choice but to develop a good impression of such a person.

The only problem is that this kid insists on running to become a pirate, wouldn't it be good to come to the headquarters and be a worthy Marine?

With Garp here, and his own outstanding strength, he can fully inherit the title of Marine hero in the future and become the next generation of Marine Admiral.

It's a pity, he can only say it's a pity...

Ace bowed his head and closed his eyes.

His heart has calmed down a lot.

Sengoku's words could not sway him at all.

He may not understand Luffy's desire to become a Shichibukai, but the solid bond forged over a decade between them allows him to overlook such uncertainties. In fact, he can even speculate a bit about Luffy's motives.

[Are you trying to use this identity to save me?]

Ace thought speculatively.

[Don't force yourself Luffy, You cannot defeat the marines.]

Perhaps at that time, Luffy had already made such a decision.

[Stupid brother! Why do you do this for me who didn't live up to you?]

Ace took a long breath and opened his eyes:

"Sengoku, you've been called 'The Resourceful General'? You know nothing."

"What did you say?"

Sengoku frowned.

The next moment, there was a low cry from the formation of the sailors.

"The gate of justice has been opened!" A giant Vice Admiral blurted out in shock.

Hearing this, Sengoku's face turned livid:

"What's going on here?! Who is it?"

Garp was stunned and subconsciously looked at Luffy.

Vice Admiral Tsuru raised her forehead: "Are there any spies inside?"

Forget it, they've already invaded from underwater anyway, and it doesn't matter whether the gate is opened or not.

Luffy was also taken aback.

He swears to The Sun God, he really didn't do it.

Feeling Garp's gaze, he was very helpless, and he would not take the blame for this.

Picking up the green tea in his hand, he took a sip.

Then he looked at the empress on the left, to be precise, at the empress's pet snake.

"Turn into a chair."

Hearing his words, Salome uttered a snake letter and turned his head away.

You stinky man also want to sit on me? Hmph, only the master can!

"Salome, Luffy is tired of standing, you can turn into a chair." The empress said softly.

Salome's snake eyes looked at the owner pitifully.

In the end, it obediently became a chair.

Luffy sat down satisfied:[this little pet dared to be arrogant with me.

Even his master is already my little girl. Not only do I want to sit on you, but I will also be your master in the future.]

"coming.."

Suddenly, Doflamingo fixed his eyes and grinned: "Fufurfur...the strongest man in the world, Whitebeard, Edward Newgate." at the same time.

On the sea surface of the inner bay, bubbles kept rising one after another, and a huge black shadow appeared on the bottom of the sea, breaking the tranquility with a bang.

"It's Moby Dick!" someone yelled.

Immediately afterwards, two huge pirate ships appeared one after another.

"Three capital ships of the Whitebeard Regiment!"

boom!

The three ships lined up in three directions, and the one in the middle was facing the execution platform.

"fire!"

Because of the preparations in advance, Marine did not panic too much about the underwater invasion of Whitebeard and others.

Sengoku immediately gave the order.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The roar of the artillery sounded, and in an instant, dozens of shells hit the three pirate ships.

At this moment, the phoenix with the green snake flame on its head flew to the sky.

The flames rolled up by his waving wings didn't have any burning power, but Qingyan swept away and detonated many shells in the air in an instant.

"Captain of the first team, Marko of the 'Phoenix'!" Moria clicked his tongue: "Kishishishi, this guy's corpse must be the best material."

The big bird in the sky speaks out:

"Is it such a gorgeous welcome ceremony? How could you easily destroy our foothold, Marine."

Zoan·Bird Bird Fruit·Phantom Beast·Phoenix Form!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The sound of metal hitting decks.

On the Moby Dick in front, the captains of the Whitebeard Pirates followed a tall man and walked towards the bow step by step.

With a naginata in hand, Whitebeard steps up the steps and finally faces the execution platform.

"Gu ra ra ra, I haven't seen you for decades, Sengoku."

"White.....Whitebeard!"

At the forefront, the five giants Vice Admiral behind the fort all felt a strong sense of oppression.

Just facing this man directly, there will be a little fear in the heart.

On the execution stand.

Sengoku snorted coldly and said: "Are you finally here to die.

"Pops!" Ace gritted his teeth.

"My dear son, just wait there for a while, and I will rescue you right away."

Whitebeard grinned.

"Why? Why did you come to save me? I am obviously the one who left New World without authorization and ended up in this situation. This is all my own fault! Why did you come here..."

Ace regretted it.

Should have listened to Luffy, don't go, just go back to New World!

Now not only has the Whitebeard group been dragged down, even the younger brother has to run to be a Shichibukai.

That guy who shouted all day long to be the One Piece when he was a

child, will become a Shichibukai?

it's all my fault!

Ace's heart was filled with pain.

"What nonsense are you talking about? How can I let you go. In this sea, everyone knows the iron law, anyone who dares to touch me, no matter who it is, will face my strength"

Whitebeard raised the naginata in his hand, with the blade down, and plunged into the deck heavily.

Afterwards, he crossed his arms in front, and veins appeared on his muscles.

With a low shout, both fists fell to the sides.

Boom!!

In an instant, the atmosphere cracked.

The sky was like a mirror, and under the blow of Whitebeard, cracks appeared that spread rapidly.

The world....is warping!

The 100,000 elite sailors in the square were sweating coldly.

The sea that was originally calm is also rolling up strange waves at this moment.

The offshore of the island of Marineford seems to have been cut into countless regular squares.

The next moment, huge waves surged on both sides of the inner bay, hundreds of meters high, like two palms, and shot towards the Marine array.

"Hai Zhen!" Sengoku looked serious.

Such a terrifying attack, once it falls, is enough to wipe out who knows how many.

"Ah ra ra... am I really the first to move?"

On the three Admiral's seats, Aokiji leaped up and volleyed in the air in an instant. He opened his arms, and the cold air born in his palms froze rapidly, and the spreading ice spears connected the huge waves on both sides.

In an instant, in less than a blink of an eye.

everything turns to ice

"Ice Age!"

The power of ice froze the nearby sea, and the tsunami set off by

Whitebeard was nothing more than a spectacle.

With a bang, the frozen sea blocked the three pirate ships from moving.

It wasn't until the waves froze that the panicked Marines breathed a sigh of relief.

"Aokiji.....you brat." Whitebeard narrowed his eyes.

And this time.

Hawkeye took a step forward, ready to draw his sword.

But Luffy is faster than him.

"Keep it for me, k.

Passed the green tea in his hand to the empress, and when he got up, he had already entered the second gear.

The moment the steam escaped from his body, Luffy disappeared over the high wall.

"Um?"

Whitebeard's eyes narrowed slightly, and a figure had crossed a distance of several hundred meters and arrived in front of him.

"The strongest in the world? Let me try."

Luffy chuckled, the armed color entangled, and the Conqueror's entangled.

Two Haki of Iv5 instantly condensed on the fist.

In an instant, black and red lightning spread like a spider web.

Ace's brother... what does this brat want to do?

Whitebeard froze for a moment, raised his left hand immediately, and punched him with strength.

Conqueror's entwine!

The Shocking Power of Shock Fruit!

boom!!!

The two fists collided in the air, and the terrifying black flash seemed to spread a big net over the inner bay.

The atmosphere was torn apart, and the hurricane rolled up out of thin air, destroying Marine's formation.

The surface of the sea that Aokiji had just frozen was smashed to pieces in an instant under the impact of two fists.

"Pa..... Conqueror's Hedge!"

"No, it's the Conqueror's infusion!"

"Impossible...the sky...is shattering!"

The clouds above Marineford rolled back at this moment, as if someone had split the sky with a Sword, and the deep and terrifying rift spread to the end of the field of vision.

Countless people gasped.

Even the many captains behind Whitebeard were forced to retreat because of the confrontation between the two.

Everyone was shocked.

Sengoku, Garp, and the three Admirals, except for Aokiji and the Empress, were all stunned, with dull expressions.

Many people know that Luffy has Conqueror's Haki.

But being able to compete with Whitebeard on an equal footing is still too shocking.

"Gu ra ra ra... what an amazing brat." Whitebeard couldn't help laughing, the corners of his mouth curled up.

Luffy was also a little surprised.

This old Whitebeard was able to parry his Haki on second gear.

Looks like there's still some strength left.

A sword in the chest, it must be really a serious injury.

"No, old man, you are the one, worthy of being the strongest in the world.

boom!!

As if it had been agreed, the two Conqueror's broke out at the same time, and in an instant, countless people were involved.

Chapter 100 Great Melee! The

Emergence Of A Third Party,

Blackbeard And The Prisoners

The powerful shockwaves from the dual onslaught of Conqueror's Haki reverberated through Neiwani Square, leaving the assembled Marines scattered and broken.

Even the elite members from diverse branches struggled to retain consciousness amidst the collision of two emperor-level Conqueror's Haki.

However, in this chaos, the two parties that triggered this scene were communicating silently.

No verbal communication is needed, just a look in the eyes, Whitebeard understands.

The meaning conveyed from Luffy's fist is even clearer than the words.

Ace's younger brother, this kid also wants to save people?

Whitebeard narrowed his eyes.

at the same time.

Below the scaffold, three Admiral's seats.

"It's scary, young people nowadays are as strong as monsters...it's creepy."

Kizaru muttered with his mouth tilted, and got up from Admiral's chair.

The next moment, his body turned into endless photons and disappeared in an instant.

Akainu raised his chin slightly, glanced at the empty seats, and then turned his gaze to Whitebeard and Luffy who were still in a stalemate.

"The grandson of the hero Garp, the son of the revolutionary dragon... At this age, he has not only awakened Conqueror's, but also cultivated to the state of Infusion. If it is an enemy, it will be very difficult!

Even if they are Shichibukai, Akainu is still wary of pirates.

The heads of the two warring people.

Photons condense into human form, and the Yellow monkey breaks into the center of the Conqueror's clash.

"There's a loophole, Whitebeard."

The raised right index finger pointed at Whitebeard's head, and Kizaru shot an arrow of light between from his fingers.

Whoosh!

The speed of the light arrow was extremely fast, but a figure flying across the sky quickly intercepted the blow.

The phoenix Marco was pierced by the light arrow, and the arrow stayed in his body.

Kizaru quirked the corner of his mouth.

"It hurts, Kizaru!"

With a shake of his wings, Marco flapped his flame wings, and while approaching Kizaru, his raised right foot quickly turned into a bird's claw.

The claws snapped towards Kizaru's chest.

"Phoenix seal!"

"It's scary...the captain of the first team!"

Kizaru raised his arm to block the claw attack, but he was in a stalemate for less than half a second before his body was beaten into a golden light and fell towards Neiwan Square.

With a bang, it penetrated a fort.

Luffy, who still has the energy to observe others, is speechless in his heart.

This is too outrageous!

I am afraid even Oscar is not worthy of his acting.

"Admiral Kizaru!"

The nearby Rear Admirals looked shocked.

With a flash of golden light, Kizaru stood in front of everyone safe and sound.

"Gu ra ra ra... how dare you be distracted when you fight against me!"

Whitebeard grinned, and the force of the tremor fruit exploded most violently.

With a bang, Luffy was also repelled by the huge earthquake, and unfortunately, he also hit a fort.

There was another burst of violent noise, and thick smoke billowed for a while.

"Straw hat Luffy!" Marines were taken aback again.

Even the old Whitebeard still has such terrifying power?!

In the smoke and dust, Luffy patted the dust on his body, got up as if nothing happened, with a serious face:

"As expected of Whitebeard, it's not so easy to be decapitated!"

Kizaru couldn't help but glance at him.

[What are you watching? My acting skills are much better than yours]

Luffy cursed from the bottom of his heart, he didn't even know if Kizaru was really acting.

However, this is not important.

He has achieved his goal.

"I'm tired, let's go back and drink tea."

Turning around and walking towards the Shichibukai formation, Luffy glanced at the three Admiral seats, and there was only one Akainu left.

The black and red lightning that enveloped the sky over the inner bay also dissipated as he stopped.

Under the execution platform.

Chief Tsuru looked at the fallen Marines, and was silent for a while before saying:

"Sure enough, it's your grandson, he really knows how to mess around."

"Ha ha ha ha."

Garp rubbed his head, covering his embarrassment with a laugh.

The enemy didn't do much, and our own people fell.

"However, very good." Chief Tsuru smiled slightly: "With this power, the pirates will never be able to break through Shichibukai's line of defense!"

That's for sure, Tsuru-Chan.

Garp sighed inwardly, Luffy's ultimate goal was to rescue Ace.

The behavior just now, in the eyes of others, may be young and vigorous, wanting to compete with the king of the old age.

But Garp understands that this in itself is a pre-rebellion acting, just a little show.

At this time.

In the direction of the Gate of Justice, more than 40 pirate ships finally appeared, and 43 pirate regiments from New World approached the battlefield in rows.

"Pops!! We're here to help you.!!!"

On a pirate ship at the forefront, the captain "Great Eddy Spider" Scuyad raised his sword and shouted, "Follow me, little ones!"

"Oh oh oh!!!"

The pirates are in high spirits, from New World, each of them is a good player with one against ten.

The sea in front of the inner bay.

Aokiji squatted on a large piece of crushed ice, and reached into the water body:

"Ice Age!"

Kakaka.

The ice that was smashed before is now frozen again.

The spreading power of ice directly blocked the forty-three pirate ships that had arrived in place, and blocked them within the range of the artillery on the shore.

"Damn Aokiji!"

"Forget it, since you have a foothold, let's go straight!"

"Follow me!!!"

The pirates jumped off the ship one after another, and under the leadership of their respective captains, they attacked the inner bay.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

There was a huge vibration, and behind the many pirate ships, an extremely huge figure gradually appeared.

It was a giant larger than ordinary giants!

"Ace!! I'm here to save you, wait a second!"

The roar of the giant made the sailors palpitate.

"What a huge body! Much bigger than ordinary giants!"

"Is it a descendant of Oz, the devil of the 'Yunguo'?"

"Captain of the Pirates of Oz, ancient giants! Little Oz jr!"

On the warships outside the inner bay, the hearts of many Marine soldiers were greatly shaken.

The body is a circle bigger than a warship, just looking at it is scary.

"Fire! Keep him away from the plaza!" Sengoku ordered calmly.

Accompanied by his order, the nearest warships turned their muzzles one after another, the main guns roared, and fired a burst of shells towards Little Oz.

The sailors on the warship also raised their guns one after another, writing bullets as dense as rain.

However, all of this, in front of the ancient giants, cannot stop even half a step.

Against the hail of bullets and the salvo of artillery, Little Oz hit the warship with his raised fist.

boom!!

In an instant, a warship was smashed into two pieces by a punch.

He grabbed half of the warship, roared, and threw it in the direction of Neiwan Square.

"Bastard Marine!!"

ah ah ah ah!

Screams sounded.

The Marines on half of the warship fell from mid-air, each with frightened faces.

"Hehehe, I want to get this corpse!" Moria opened his hands excitedly:

"Come here! Little Ozzy! I will give you eternal life!"

"....Do zombies count as life?"

Doflamingo's five fingers are clawed, facing the half of the warship falling from the sky. Shoot a claw suddenly.

"Five Color Strings!"

The invisible silk thread cut half of the warship, and before landing, the warship disintegrated in the air and fell to everyone in the form of smaller wreckage.

"Can't you stop it properly?"

Luffy sat on a soft Salome chair with a cup of green tea in his hand.

One of the wreckages almost hit him.

For Doflamingo's behavior of only looking out for himself, Empress stood up.

"Perfume Femur!"

Leaping lightly, the empress kicked vigorously, smashing the wreckage of the warship that fell towards Luffy into pieces.

"Thanks, Hanco."

The Snake Girl who landed on the ground immediately covered her cheeks, blinked her eyes, not daring to look at anyone.

A small pink theater suddenly appeared in her mind.

"These are two self-healing fruits, go and give them to our sisters.

"What...!?"

"Well, your sister is also my sister."

"Ah~~!"

[Could this be a marriage proposal? Ah~ what should I do?]

Hancock covered her face, immersed in his own world.

Even Luffy couldn't guess what she was thinking at this moment.

His attention was not on the Empress either.

Keeping an eye on Akainu.

This guy sits firmly like a Mount Tai, motionless.

[Forget it, lets not worry, there is still some time before the execution, Akainu will leave that position sooner or later.]

His eyes turned to the battlefield in the inner bay.

The pirates risked their lives to charge, and the roar of the artillery on the shore continued.

Led by Little Oz, the pirates approached Whitebeard's Moby Dick very quickly.

"Ozzy..." Whitebeard frowned and said, "Going to die and being brave are not the same thing!"

"Pops, don't stop me, I will definitely rescue Ace!"

Little Ozzy, who didn't listen to dissuasion at all, strode towards the inner bay with big strides.

Seeing this, Aokiji sighed, and outstretched his right palm, condensing ice spears one after another.

Two Spears!

Before the ice spear was fired, a figure came rushing like a bull.

boom!

Aokiji was knocked into the air and his moves were interrupted.

The whole person hit the iron wall of the inner bay.

"This guy Oz is really reckless, but if you want to stop him, you have to ask me if I agree, Admiral!"

Half of the bullish man turned into a shining diamond.

Whitebeard Pirates, the captain of the third team, "Diamond" Joz.

After finishing speaking, another captain jumped off the boat.

"Just let me lead the way for Oz!"

Captain of the 5th division, "Foil" Vista.

He quickly drew two Western swords and launched a surprise attack on Aokiji.

And the other side.

Kizaru jumped into the air again, and his body turned into a shining

golden star.

"Eight-foot Qiong Gouyu!"

Countless light bullets hit the pirates indiscriminately.

Judging by Luffy's knowledge, it's about 2,000 rounds per second.

However, at the moment when the light bullets spread out, Marco who was hovering in the sky intercepted his attack again.

Boom boom boom boom!

"Don't be kidding, your opponent is me!"

For a while, the scene was extremely chaotic.

The pirates marched forward triumphantly, led by Little Ozzy, who led the charge of 50,000 pirates. The artillery on the shore and the gunners on the warship couldn't stop it at all.

On Marine's side, there are Kizaru and Aokiji again.

No, to be precise, it's paddling.

It's like clocking in at work, and the guest is being held back by Whitebeard's team leaders.

On the execution stand.

Ace clenched his fists.

Sengoku picked up the phone bug and gave the command with a deadpan expression:

Do it, don't let the pirates in!"

Marine, who got the order, rushed into the bend one after another.

Several giants, Vice Admiral, jumped down to stop Little Ozzy.

In an instant, a big melee broke out.

Go back in time a little.

About an hour ago, when Ace was taken away by Marine and went to the headquarters for execution.

The deep sea prison is also in chaos.

IV1, Crimson Hell.

With the assistance of Lafitte, Buggy released countless prisoners, which caused a huge commotion and at the same time attracted the attention of the prison guards.

IV6, Eternal Hell.

"Thief hahaha, look carefully, there are really many people locked up in the cells here!"

Blackbeard laughed wildly.

"Who are you?" A deep voice sounded from one of the cells.

"I'm Blackbeard, how about it? Do you want to go out and have a big fight with me? An all-out war between Naval Headquarters and Whitebeard is about to break out!"

Blackbeard looked fiercely at the prisoners in the cell.

Although locked, the cloth is different from the prisoners.

With a cigar in his mouth and a sheriff's hat on, the man leaned cross-legged against the wall:

"I am the head guard here, Shiryu of the Rain. Although I have never heard of your name, it is a remarkable person who broke into this place."

"Aren't you a pirate? The Warden can also be locked up?"

"Heh, just killed a few prisoners. How's Magellan?"

"Suppressing prisoners on the first floor, thanks to his stupidity, I can get here so easily!"

Blackbeard grinned, and it was easy to tell from the other person's eyes that this was not a peaceful person.

"Open the shackles!"

Shiryu narrowed his eyes, and the corner of his mouth with a cigar in his mouth raised an arc: "Even in Iv6 Eternal Hell, prisoners will be kept in different areas. Let me take you to the place where the real monsters

are!"

After a pause, he said again: "This is full of rubbish!"

Rubbish?

Blackbeard observed the nearby prison cells, and sure enough, they were all people who were very old, or who were so weak that they didn't even bother to talk to him when he appeared.

Such a person has probably been imprisoned for a long, long time.

Maybe a few decades ago, they were also famous masters, but now, they are so thin and weak that they can't even be called (of Zhao's) combat strength.

"Then take me there!"

Blackbeard released Shiryu, but the others ignored him.

Shiryu, who had regained his freedom, moved his stiff body and led the way.

"Wait...let me out too.

Suddenly, a slight voice resounded among a group of old, weak, sick and disabled.

Blackbeard paused and looked back towards a cell.

The faces of the people in the cell were pale, and it seemed that they would not live for long.

"and who are you?"

"Who am I...I'm just a loser."

"name?"

"Baloric Redfield."

The old man answered calmly.

Red Earl?!

Blackbeard thought in surprise, he had heard the name.

Decades ago, a man who could stand on equal footing with Roger and

Whitebeard by just one person.

Also known as "Lonely Red"!

"Thief hahaha, a person like you will not be subdued. But, forget it, let me let you out!"

Blackbeard took the keys and threw one of them into the cell.

After that, he left.

Led by Shiryu, the two came to the real monster lair.

When Blackbeard and Shiryu appeared, the monsters all gathered in front of the prison.

"Let me out! Let me out!"

Someone yelled.

"Thief hahaha, you should thank Aokiji very much!"

Marineford, because of the slag.

The big melee is still going on.

In the nearly half an hour of fighting, many people were killed or injured on both the Pirate side and the Marine side.

On the ice platform made by Aokiji, there is a large red area.

Akainu remained unmoved.

suddenly.

He frowned and looked up at the sky.

At the same moment, Luffy also cast his gaze towards the sky.

The tsunami created by Whitebeard was turned into an ice sculpture by Aokiji.

A group of people stood in a row, overlooking from a height.

"It's the thief, Zihahaha, are we exposed?" Blackbeard laughed. .

Chapter 101 Betrayal! Shake The

Five Elders! Sun God Vs Buddha

Sengoku!

Is that... Blackbeard?

Luffy frowned.

The man at the top of the frozen tsunami, lacking a few teeth in his mouth, has a rough appearance, thick hair on his body, and a burly figure.

Blackbeard, Marshall D Teach.

When that unique laughter resounded in the sky, it immediately cooled down the heated war.

Akainu frowned, who is that?

Sengoku's pupils shrank suddenly, he doesn't know Blackbeard. But next to Blackbeard, the group of prisoners dressed in black and white prison uniforms, each of them is still fresh in his memory, and some of them were even sent to the prison by himself.

"What's going on? Why are the prisoners from Impel down here!"

Several faces were clearly recognized.

Among them, the warden of the large prison instantly attracted the attention of many Marines.

"Shiryu of the Rain!" Sengoku asked with an ugly face, "Why are you standing here as the Impel down warden? And why are you standing with a group of criminals? Answer me! How is Magellan?"

Shiryu retrieved his saber, still with a thick-long cigar in his mouth.

Facing Sengoku's loud questioning, he just smiled lowly: "It doesn't suit you, Marshal Sengoku, such a gaffe is not your style. As for Magellan? No one with a bad brain can survive in the next new era.

Not an answer to the question, but Sengoku got it.

This bastard has betrayed!

He was not a law-abiding guy in the first place, as the chief warden, he killed prisoners indiscriminately and became bloodthirsty, and now he

did such a rebellious thing.

Sengoku's face was livid.

"Furfurfur, things seem to be getting interesting all of a sudden?"

Doflamingo had an expression that he didn't think it was a big deal to watch the excitement.

Bartholemew Kuma was silent.

In the crowd of prisoners, he unexpectedly saw a familiar face...

Shemale King, Emporio Ivankov!

"Enemy army? Friendly army? That's impossible, right?" Moria laughed strangely, and also had a spectator attitude towards the sudden appearance of a third-party force.

"Too high."

Hawkeye drew out the black Sword Yoru on his back expressionlessly, and it was just a flat slash like an ordinary swing.

Thousands of meters away, the pitch-black slash instantly cut through the frozen tsunami.

With one blow, the huge mountain-like block of ice was split into upper and lower sections in an instant.

boom!!

Among Marine and Pirates, countless people were stunned.

"Is this the power of the world's number one slash?!"

Falling with the iceberg.

With a loud bang, a huge hole was smashed into the ice inside the bend.

The number of prisoners brought by Blackbeard is not only 980, on the contrary, their number exceeds the scale of a thousand people!!

Only a few of them landed safe and sound, because some prisoners were thrown into the sea.

"Champion" Jesus Burgessfished Blackbeard out of the sea.

"Hoo..Hoo... almost drowned! I'm a capable person, save me up early!"

Blackbeard lay on the ice, gasping for breath.

"Teach...!" Ace gritted his teeth and stared at this person.

"Teach?"

Sengoku frowned.

Then he saw Whitebeard move.

Jumping off the Moby Dick, he walked towards Blackbeard with a sullen face.

"Teach, you bastard is the root of everything."

With Conqueror's Haki wrapped around him, Whitebeard's aura is extremely terrifying.

Blackbeard was taken aback, and quickly waved his hand towards

Whitebeard:

"Pops! This is not the time to talk about this, I...I'm here to save Ace!"

It was Like hearing the most ridiculous joke. Whitebeard looked up to the sky and laughed twice, then his eyes were cold, and his raised fist was wrapped with the power of Shock: "Only you, not my son!"

An angry punch is enough to shatter the island and tear the sea apart.

In a hurry, Blackbeard greeted back with a palm.

"Dark water!"

A thick dark fog surrounded the palms, and Whitebeard's complexion changed the moment the fists and palms met.

His fruit power is being absorbed!

The power that shakes everything disappears invisible in the blink of an eye in front of the darkness.

"Thief Zihahaha..."

When Blackbeard was successful, he went crazy and grabbed

Whitebeard's wrist: "I've already got it, pops, I have already surpassed

you with this power!"

While speaking, he grabbed Whitebeard with one hand, and made a fist with the other hand, hitting Whitebeard hard in the abdomen.

Boom!!

Amidst the dull sound, Whitebeard's legs were slightly lifted off the ground.

"Thief hahaha, this is my power, the power of Dark Fruit, the gravitational force of darkness will swallow everything! You understand now? It wasn't me who wanted to kill Captain Thatch, but.....It is this power that chose me, old thing!!"

Boom!

Boom!!

One punch, another punch.

Blackbeard punched Whitebeard hard.

However, with a snap, Whitebeard dropped the naginata in his hand and grabbed the fist that was hitting him.

"That's the kind of person you are, Teach, an idiot who gets carried away with a little bit of the upper hand!"

Whitebeard snorted coldly.

Blackbeard's expression changed.

His fist, never came back!

The Shock Fruit's ability was obviously blocked by the Dark Fruit's power, but Whitebeard's grip alone made him feel tricky.

next moment.

Whitebeard yanked, and at the same time he let go of Blackbeard, his right hand wrapped around Conqueror's punched, moving towards Blackbeard's face.

"Wait... wait! Pops! I was wrong! Wait, wait! Wait, wait! I am your dear

son!"

Blackbeard yelled in panic.

However, Whitebeard had no intention of showing mercy.

However, at this moment, another Conqueror's erupted suddenly.

A figure approached rapidly, punching Whitebeard's fist.

boom!!

With a loud bang, Blackbeard and the two people who came to rescue were all sent flying by the tyrant's blow, and the blood flowed wildly.

"Um?"

Whitebeard frowned.

Luffy raised his eyebrows in surprise: "Heir of the devil, Douglas Bullet.

One Piece Roger's former crew.

Such a man would take orders from Blackbeard?

Blackbeard fell to the ground and cried out:

"It hurts! It hurts! Damn it, I will suffer twice as much pain as ordinary people!"

Bullet at the side coughed up a mouthful of blood, and his face was covered with scars.

The fist against Whitebeard has already been discounted at this time.

His heavy panting:

"Hahahaha...don't shout, I'll take most of the damage, don't forget the promise, Blackbeard!"

at the same time.

On the execution platform, Sengoku quickly adjusted his strategy.

Although I don't know what these prisoners are here for, but since they appeared, let's deal with them together!

"Retreat, plan to start!"

Under the execution platform, Vice Admiral Crane immediately took out

a confidential phone bug, and quickly said:

"Taking advantage of the distraction on both sides, everyone withdrew to the inner bay.

The Marines who received the order began to retreat in an orderly manner under the leadership of their respective officers.

Little Ozzy, who was unstoppable, immediately rushed forward with great strides.

He is less than 2000 meters away from Neiwang Square!

"Ace, I'm here to save you!"

With all his attention on Ace, Little Ozzy tried his best to reach out to the execution platform.

He didn't see at all, nor did he notice that under his body, a black shadow quickly elongated, broke away from the ground, and charged straight up like a spear.

"Shadow Horn Gun!"

puff!

The black shadow spear suddenly pierced Little Oz's chest, pierced through his internal organs, and passed out from his back.

"Hehehe, I accept your body!" Moria smiled strangely.

uh~!

Little Ozzy's hand hovered in the air, and blood spit out from his mouth as if he didn't want money.

Vision became blurred, consciousness began to slack.

"..."

With a bang, he fell to the ground 20 meters away from the square.

"Ozzy!!" Marko yelled, "Damn Shichibukai!"

It's hopeless.

Those six Shichibukai are standing there, how on earth can they break

through?

"Pops, Marine suddenly started to retreat!" Vista quickly came to Whitebeard, and the rest of the captains also gathered.

As soon as he finished speaking, a wall of copper and iron rose up in the inner bay.

at the same time.

On the execution stand.

Akainu, who had been standing still, finally stood up.

"Whether it's a prisoner or Whitebeard, the evil will be punished!"

His arms turned into billowing magma, and he raised his arms to the sky, as if the turret had punched out huge lava fists one after another.

"Meteor Volcano!"

Noticed his actions before the pirates.

Luffy's eyes were fixed, and he couldn't help laughing.

You finally left your seat.

He immediately looked at the empress, the girl (◡◡◡) was still immersed in her own world.

"Hancock."

"Yes~"

The empress immediately turned around, the little theater in her mind was finally over.

"What about things?"

Hearing this, the empress immediately took out a key from her chest,

"This is your brother's key.

Reliable woman!

Possessing the power to charm all beings, it is too easy for the empress to want a key to the seastone shackles.

Luffy held the beauty's hand and took out a self-healing fruit from the

system at the same time.

"There is only one of this thing for the time being, give it to your sisters, the situation on the battlefield will be more chaotic in the future, you should protect yourself.

After getting the key, Luffy got up and walked towards the execution platform.

The Empress, on the other hand, was completely sluggish in place.

The small theater has really come true!!

Suddenly, a gust of wind and sand swept past.

Luffy's footsteps paused.

Crocodile appeared in front of him.

"Ha ha ha ha... Long time no see, Straw Hat Luffy."

He stroked the gold pirate hook in his left hand with his right hand.

Probably very concerned about his own image, and even changed his prison uniform to his old suit.

"It's only a little over a month." Luffy looked flat, "Don't be an eyesore, get out of here."

"Still as arrogant as ever..."

Crocodile smiled, and didn't care about the verbal provocation: "I climbed up from hell, you bastard took away all my former subordinates, right?"

"You want them back?"

Luffy was happy, those agents had long forgotten about their former boss, at most Mr. 1 still had a little bit of loyalty to speak of.

But only a little bit.

"No, those trash are not worth mentioning at all. How about the thing you mentioned? Do you want to cooperate with me? Since it is hidden in that kind of place, it is difficult for you to get it alone, right?"

Crocodile sends out an invitation.

Luffy was surprised.

This person who is not convinced by anyone will take the initiative to propose cooperation with others?

Of course, he couldn't have worked with Crocodile.

Not to mention what Vivi would think.

At once

Is this weakling worthy of discussing cooperation with him?

"roll."

Not interested in entanglement with the other party, Luffy ignored Crocodile and walked towards the execution platform step by step.

Crocodile narrowed his eyes unhappily.

"Fufurfur...Sand crocodile, I heard what you said about the cooperation."

Doflamingo approached from behind with arrogant figure-and unusual steps.

"Would you like to tell me, maybe I will agree?"

His five fingers moved slightly.

In an instant, Crocodile's head was separated and his head flew up.

But even so, the mouth is still moving.

"Ah? What are you?"

in this brief interlude.

The sky suddenly became fiery red.

The fist of lava that Akainu hit into the sky, at this moment, densely fell towards the pirates.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

All of a sudden, there were shouts one after another.

The prisoners shouted:

"I want to go back! It's still safe in prison!"

"It's that bastard Akainu's move!"

"Rush, rush to the square if you don't want to die!"

Whether it is the prisoner's side or the Whitebeard's side, at this moment, there is only one goal.

Whitebeard's face sank: "Little ones, follow me!"

Regardless of Blackbeard, Whitebeard took the lead and rushed towards the square.

"Oz...your death will not be in vain!"

Whitebeard saw little Ozzy's body, jumped up with a gloomy expression, and flew past his body.

Bang, stand on the square!

In an instant, the sailors became panic-stricken.

"Come here, Marine!"

Whitebeard roared, his raised right fist wrapped in shock.

He punched forward.

Boom!

The atmosphere is like a mirror, tearing apart again, and the vibration spreads towards the execution platform.

Wherever it passed, the ground in the square was shattered, countless sailors were involved, and the screams continued.

And at this moment, three tall figures blocked in front of him.

Marine Three Admiral stretched out his hands and easily blocked the blow.

"Hmph, how could it be possible for you to attack the execution platform so easily?" Akainu said disdainfully: "The strongest man in the world is just a boast of a group of ignorant people. Whitebeard, you are Just an old pirate. "

"Magma Imp!"

Whitebeard swung the naginata into the wind and slashed at the three of

them.

"I am Whitebeard! Are you three trying to block me too!"

boom!!

The battlefield shifted from the sea in the bend to the Neivan Square.

at the same time.

On the execution stand.

Sengoku was taken aback suddenly.

"Straw hat Luffy, what are you doing here? As a Shichibukai, you should be on the front line to stop the pirates from stepping into the square."

"Luffy..." Ace stared blankly at his younger brother.

"Yo, Ace."

Throwing the key in his hand, Luffy said lightly: "Marshal Sengoku, I'm sorry, I don't think the position of Shichibukai is really suitable for me, as expected, pirates are more free."

As he spoke, his outstretched right hand grabbed Ace's arm like lightning, and pulled him behind his back.

Seeing this scene, Sengoku was stunned.

Because the favorability towards Luffy before was too high, and after participating in the war, he was also the first person to fight against Whitebeard.

He doesn't have much defense against Luffy.

Sengoku didn't fully react until Ace was taken away.

"Are you kidding me!"

Sengoku was furious, his face sullen enough to drip water.

It seems that due to anger, his body is rapidly growing, exuding golden Buddha light.

"Leave the prisoner! No, I will execute the sentence myself!!"

With a roar, Sengoku slapped the two of them.

Zoan·Human Fruit·Phantom Beast·Great Buddha Form!

"Only you?"

Luffy grinned and shifted into fifth gear in an instant.

Sun God Form!

One punch, hit!

boom!!

The huge explosion almost shot out a round of scorching sun, dazzling light shining in all directions.

"Hahahahahahahahaha!"

With the sound of the drum of liberation, Luffy grabbed Ace and stood in the air.

.....

at the same time.

Holy Land, Mariejois.

In front of a beautiful man-made landscape.

Inside the gazebo.

Five Elders looked at the live broadcast with a face full of shock.

"This is... Rubber Fruit!"

"No, it's the awakened Sun God!!".

Chapter 102 Im Appears! The End

Of An Era! Whitebeard's Last

Dance!

"Impossible! How is this possible!"

"For 800 years, the fruit that has never been awakened has appeared in this era!"

"And it's all happening right now on this global broadcast!"

The Five Elders, the big shots in charge, are standing there in total shock.

The bald one, rocking a white Taoist robe and holding his sword, can't

believe it either:

"We can't let him get away with this! Monkey D. Luffy!"

There is a little fear in the tone, with a hint of malice.

He is the Warrior God of Finance, and his full name is...Saint Ethanbaron

V. Nusjuro!

"Live broadcast, the live broadcast must be cut off!"

The bald man hurriedly took out the phone bug and quickly dialed a number.

The old man with a goatee and long straight white hair, wearing a dark blue suit, managed to maintain a trace of composure:

"That bastard Garp, from his son to grandson two generation full of trouble!"

He is the Warrior God of the Environment, his full name is...Saint Marcus Mars!

Five Elders, with blond hair and beard, held his forehead and said with a headache:

"What a gaffe! This kid turned his back on this kind of thing! Podocus D. Ace was rescued! This is a disgrace to the government in front of the whole world! Sengoku that idiot!!"

He is the Warrior God of Agriculture, and his full name is...Saint Shepherd Ju Peter!

The last of Five Elders, with a mustache, and a Madara birthmark on his forehead:

"Don't panic, calm down!"

He's a Warrior God of Justice named...Saint Topman Warcury!

"First of all, contact Naval Headquarters immediately and ask them to cut off the live broadcast."

"Secondly, be sure to kill the Yonko Whitebeard and save the face of the

government!"

"And eliminate Roger's evil blood, Portgas D. Ace must die!"

"Finally.... Monkey D. Luffy must not be allowed to leave Marineford!!"

St. Warcury arranged the further actions in a very orderly manner.

Suddenly, a butterfly flew into this beautiful man-made landscape and flew into the pavilion.

The butterfly landed on top of the video phone bug.

It folded its wings, as if it possessed a mind, and stared at the silver-white figure in the picture. The man in the picture is standing in the air, with the posture of stepping on the flame cloud, the white hair burning like a flame. Undoubtedly the Sun God.

Seeing this butterfly, the Five Elders were startled.

He got up from his seat in a jerk, and looked back at the entrance of the gazebo.

They saw a person wearing a ground-length cloak and four towering spiked crowns appearing quietly.

The person had blood-red pupils, with thin circles outside the holes, and the person's eyes were calm, like a god sitting on a cloud, looking down on the world.

"Imu-Sama!"

The Five Elders kneel together.

"Hmm amazing"

The person's tone was calm: "After eight hundred years, I can still see the awakening of this fruit, and it really appeared in the generation of 'D'."

"Please give me an order!" Saint Marcus, the Warrior God of the environment, did not dare to raise his head, his tone was low.

"You don't need to panic." The person continued: "It's just another light that needs to be extinguished."

"So, should we use 'that weapon'?" Saint Jaygarcia Saturn, the god of defense of science, suggested with gloomy eyes.

The man remained silent, his gaze fell on Luffy, and he stared at it for a long time.

The Five Elders did not dare to disturb, and quietly waited for the king's decision.

"What Warcury said is very good, and Imu agrees. But add one more person, the priority is at the top... Moria, erase him as well."

"Follow your orders!"

The Five Elders agreed together, and they didn't look up until after a long time, till Imu was nowhere to be seen.

New World.

The city of music, Alegia.

The king's castle, once a symbol of prosperity, is now gradually abandoned in the riots ten years ago.

music room.

The images released from the eyeballs affecting the phone bug were projected onto the wall.

A girl named Uta is playing the piano while looking at the person in the picture with a smile.

"Luffy suddenly changed his appearance, so handsome"

Muttering like this, the bunny ear hair on the back of the girl's head suddenly stood up, and she said happily to herself: "I thought of a good song! Luffy, you really are my lucky star~"

After picking up news papers on the shore last time, a few days later, she picked up a few phones washed ashore:

But now, after seeing Luffy's sun god form, and aiming to be the world's number one singer, she has new inspiration.

I am preparing to play inspiration into piano music.

At this time, the door of the music room opened.

The adoptive father, who is also a music teacher, came in.

"Uta, lunch is ready.

"Wait a minute, the war seems to be reaching its climax."

Uta shook his head, "By the way, Gordon, what is a Warlord?"

"Shichibukai....."

Gordon looked up at the live broadcast screen. The silver figure in the screen was inexplicably familiar, as if he had seen it somewhere before.

He hadn't had time to answer.

suddenly.

puff!

The live screen disappeared.

"Ahhh~!"

Uta screamed, hurriedly ran to the video phone bug, clasped her hands together and asked: "Mr. phone bug, is it broken? Please come on! I want to see Luffy! Don't let the screen disappear!"

Gordon: (- ... -)

He said in silence: "That's because the source of message has disappeared, it's not a problem with the phone bug."

"What to do! I don't want to miss it! What will happen to Luffy!"

Uta freaked out.

Sabaody Archipelago.

Live in front of the big screen.

The reporters were all shocked.

"What the hell is going on? Shichibukai Monkey D. Luffy betrayed?"

"What was that gesture?"

"Has Portgas D. Ace been rescued?!"

big news!

Journalists don't care about the outcome.

Justice? Evil?

Marine wins? Pirate rescued?

don't care that much.

At this time, after a brief shock, they picked up the pens and papers in their hands one by one, and excitedly wrote the news content.

"The Straw Hat..."

Under a gigantic Alpine mangrove tree, a man sat on a big rock, grinning at the screen in the distance.

"Captain, that guy is really scary, he dared to turn his back on Marine so resolutely to save people in such a frenzied war!" a subordinate exclaimed.

"Yeah, this is by no means a coincidence, is it? It should be a premeditated action!"

"But, why did he do this? What should we do next? The war will not stop just because the condemned prisoners are rescued. On the contrary, Marine will fight back frantically!"

The subordinates talked a lot.

The person pondered for a moment, then grinned: "Go, go to Naval Headquarters!"

"Eh!?"

Everyone was shocked.

At this moment, the live broadcast screen suddenly disappeared.

Suddenly, everyone was shocked.

"What's going on? Hey, is there something wrong with the bug at this time?"

"Who's going to check it out! Quick!"

"Get out the spare video phone bug!"

"No, it's not the phone bug, the signal is broken!"

Sabaody Archipelago's live broadcast was chaotic.

Not only here, live broadcasts all over the world "disappeared one after another.

The scene of Summit War.

Luffy stood in the air, holding Ace's arm with his left hand, and the laughter resounded over the battlefield.

Everyone was stunned.

The sudden betrayer rescued the condemned prisoner with almost a one-shot move.

The figure standing in the sky at this moment has become the focus of attention of the audience.

On the execution platform...

No, the scaffold has been shattered by the fist-to-palm clash of Sengoku, the sun god and Buddha.

At this moment, amidst a pile of ruins, the golden Buddha knelt on one knee, his expression livid:

"What a disaster! Straw Hat Luffy...you bastard!"

The audience fell silent.

Vice Admiral Tsuru immediately got the order from above to cut off the live broadcast signal.

Then she raised her head and looked up at the figure in the sky, with cold sweat streaming down her forehead.

"Garp, don't say you don't know anything."

She looked angrily at the Marine hero beside her.

However, this man, who is usually very heroic in the face of everything, has a very complicated expression at this time.

Orders from the Five Elders, he heard too.

Crane may not know, and others do not understand.

But he is very clear.

Here is what Luffy, who is in the form of Nika, will face in the future.

"Luffy...!" Garp gritted his teeth, not knowing what to do.

But there is still a joy in his heart.

A pirate is a pirate, but the family is different.

If his family members were rescued, even he would feel a little joy from the bottom of his heart.

The burden of justice is too heavy, and now that he realizes his own heart, Garp is relieved.

He is not some saint.

"Fufurfur...does this power still exist? The awakening of the fruit? It turns out to be Zoan's ability user!"

Doflamingo was the first to recover from the shock, shrugging his shoulders, grinning, and suggested to Marine next to him: "Just let them go, it will be more interesting.

The Vice admiral clenched its fists: " Luffy Sama...why?"

However, in this environment of full attention, there are people who have not forgotten their mission.

"You're distracted, Whitebeard!"

Akainu turned into magma, drilled out from the ground, and slammed his right fist into Whitebeard's chest.

Dark Hound!

boom!!

A punch pierced Whitebeard's armor, and high-temperature lava penetrated Whitebeard's body.

Whitebeard, who was distracted and looked up at the sky, couldn't help

but groan.

Blood spilled from the corner of his mouth, but he was grinning:

"Gu ra ra ra, it looks like we won, magma brat!"

"Hmph, you don't think you can all retreat and leave safely, do you? The pirates are all damned! It's nothing more than eliminating you first, and that Roger's kid later!"

There was a snap.

Whitebeard grabbed the hand of lava that hit him, threw away the naginata, and with a roar, punched he punched out.

Boom!

Akainu let out a groan, spat out blood, and was smashed into the ground by the blow.

"Admiral Akainu!" The Vice Admirals in the distance were shocked:

"Damn monster! Still have so much energy?!"

Whitebeard clutched the wound on his chest, showing fatigue for the first time.

He yelled:

"Straw Hat Luffy, well done! Take Ace and leave now, Whitebeard Pirates, cover them all!"

The sound resounded through the sky.

"Pops!"

Ace, who was grabbed by Luffy, was shaking all over his face.

Whitebeard is old, even if he still has a strong attack power, but in terms of endurance and physical strength, he is not as good as a young man.

If it was before, Akainu's sneak attack would not have been successful.

That is a man who releases his knowledge all the time, even when he is sleeping.

"Luffy, let me go, I'm going to help!"

"What are you talking about?"

Luffy glanced at him.

[I'm here waiting for Whitebeard to die, you run to save him? Just because you want to save him? That's three Admiral siege, even peak Whitebeard must suffer.]

Not to mention an elderly Whitebeard.

At this time, the phoenix Marco flew over.

"Ace's younger brother!" He shouted in a deep voice, "Retreat! Since it is Dad's order, I will protect the two of you to evacuate safely!"

Luffy: "..."

[Who do you look down on?]

Throw Ace over on the spot.

"I gave it to you, hurry up, I'll come after you!"

Between the words, a golden light suddenly rose from the ground.

Kizaru intercepted in front of Marko, raised his right foot, and kicked towards Ace's head.

"In this case, the old man can only execute the punishment...!?"

A white light flashed in front of his eyes.

boom!

Kizaru was shocked to find that his head was held down and thrown directly from the air to the ground.

°.°

There is no time to react!

No, to be precise, he didn't expect Luffy to be so fast!

Luffy looked down at Kizaru on the ground, and said lightly: "Everyone is too contemptuous. Do you want to do unnecessary things in front of me?"

He is not the Luffy in the original story, who will make a Rob Lucci dance in front of him.

At this time, a white light shone in his eyes.

The Observation Haki that can predict the future enveloped the audience.

Marco was equally surprised.

so strong!

The tyranny shown in the fist fight with the old man before is already too strong.

But now this awakening posture is still above that!

It's completely the fighting power of Four Emperors level!

"Ace's younger brother, you can leave it to me, don't worry!"

Marco caught Ace, his wings fluttered, and he quickly headed towards the Moby Dick.

"Let me go, Marco!" Ace said anxiously: "Are you going to let Pops face the three Generals alone!?"

"Stop talking stupid, Ace, this is Dad's decision, the captain's order is absolute!"

Marco took a deep breath and took the man away without hesitation.

Seeing this, Sengoku in the ruins of the execution platform roared:

"Stop him! Don't let them escape!"

"Gu ra ra ra ra ra, it's too ugly, Sengoku."

Whitebeard laughed loudly, swung his arm, and with a bang, the force of the vibration instantly sent the nearby Marines flying like mowing grass.

"...Whitebeard!" Sengoku clenched his fists, his eyes were cold.

Whitebeard's breathing became heavier as he bellowed:

"Our goal has been achieved, there is no business for us anymore!"

"Listen to me! The Whitebeard Pirates!!!"

"Hahahaha.....The final command of the captain is now conveyed!"

"Everyone, return to the ship safe and sound!"

As he said so, he raised his right fist high, and veins burst into his

muscles.

The little physical strength left is rapidly transforming into a force that shakes the world.

"I am already a remnant of the old times, New World has no boat that can carry me!"

"Sons, return! Marines will be stopped by me alone, please rest assured, no one can cross it!"

Boom!!

Regardless of his health, this move can even be said that it is a blow that consumes vitality.

The sky is cracked.

Behind Whitebeard, a long ravine was born that tore through the island.

Deep gullies, even from which magma can be seen rolling.

"Straw hat Luffy, you go too! I thank you from the bottom of my heart!"

Hearing this, Luffy, who was standing in the air, folded his hands on his chest, neither walking nor helping.

He grinned:

"This era is called Whitebeard, and I want to witness the end of this era!"

Chapter 103 Whitebeard's Last

Words! Start With Shock Fruit!

"Chase! Don't let 'Fire Fist' Ace escape!"

Sengoku shouted.

There are three goals in this battle.

Highest priority, kill Whitebeard.

Second priority, execute Ace.

The last thing is to wipe out as many pirates as possible.

Now it seems that Whitebeard is at the end of his strength, and the rescued Fire Fist Ace, in the current environment, will not let it go easily!

"If you can escape so easily, where will Marine's face be put... Yata Mirror!"

Kizaru stood up from the ground, tilted his mouth, and looked at Marko, the phoenix in the sky.

His palms faced each other, a bright light was born between the two palms, and a straight golden pressure suddenly shot out.

"You think I'll let you...!?"

Whitebeard immediately wanted to stop it, but as soon as he took a step, the magma that was driven into his body by Akainu made him unable to help covering his wound.

puff.

A stream of blood spat out from the mouth, and the vision was a bit blurred.

Seeing that a beam of golden light was about to catch up to Marco, another white figure cut in from the high altitude obliquely above, intercepted in front like lightning.

"White Rocket!"

Luffy smashed the golden light and knocked Kizaru's body out.

Unable to dodge in time, Kizaru suffered a severe blow to the abdomen, and blood overflowed from the corner of his mouth.

He fell straight to the ground, smashing a big hole in the square.

boom!

With a loud bang, the earth shattered, and the ground within a hundred meters was torn apart by the impact.

"Kizaru Admiral!" a Vice Admiral said in shock: "Impossible...! That's moving at the speed of light, how did it get intercepted!? How fast is Straw hat Luffy!"

"I told you not to do unnecessary things in front of me."

Luffy stood in the air, looking down at everyone calmly.

Kizaru in the pit was lying on the ground in big characters, no longer his usual leisurely and calm demeanor, frowning slightly:

"This is..., Observation Haki and so strong that predicts the future?"

Saying so, he raised his left hand and gave instructions to a small phone bug worn on his left wrist:

"Don't let the pirates escape, do it.

"Is it my turn at last? Father."

A dull voice came from the other end of the phone.

Immediately afterwards, from a passageway in Neiwan Square, the gate opened, and a burly man with a huge ax on his shoulders and a stocky figure like a wrestler [but with a hairstyle like a girl's face came out.

He pointed out:

"Destroy those pirates, PX!"

Behind him, one after another humanoid weapons came out of the gate, each of them looked exactly like Bartholemew Kuma, like clones.

Their movements were all the same. After slightly bending their knees, they shot up and reached the towering iron wall of the inner bay in a single leap.

Thirty pacifists standing side by side opened their mouths one after another, and laser beams condensed in their mouths.

The ice outside the inner bay....

No, there is no ice there anymore, bombed by Akainu's Meteor Volcano, it has already turned into a potholed situation.

The high temperature brought by it is still melting the ice layer.

The pirates ran wildly on it, and wanted to return to their respective pirate ships before the ice melted.

However, at this time.

Thirty lasers fired by the pacifists instantly set off explosions everywhere.

Many pirates died on the spot with the screams.

heaven.

"Marco, let me down." Ace gritted his teeth.

"Do you still want to go back? You are the target! Dad's words..."

"I understand, I have calmed down, and I will not let him down!"

Ace took a deep breath, his eyes were no longer confused, "Whether it's

Luffy, Dad, or you, everyone came here to save me. If I die here, I'm

really a complete idiot!"

Marco breathed a sigh of relief.

"So, those weapons on the iron wall must be destroyed! Otherwise the ship will be in danger! Marko!"

"I see."

Marco nodded and immediately threw Ace out.

Ace, who descended from the sky, punched the pacifists with great anger.

A fist of fire that descended from the sky.

"fire punch!!"

boom!!

The fire was like a pillar, swallowing several units in an instant, and the

flames of thousands of degrees destroyed their power systems. With a

bang, a huge explosion sounded.

At the same time, Marco also flapped his wings and swooped down.

His bird's head turned into pitch black, crashing at high speed, using the

simplest, most violent, and most primitive physical method, smashing

one in the blink of an eye.

The pacifist numbered 17 was directly cut off in the middle and died in

an explosion.

In the flames, the phoenix flew to the next target!

"Worthy of being a captain of Whitebeard pirates, you have a skill."

Aokiji who was silent for a while appeared on the iron wall, the cold air gathered on his right arm, and suddenly released a huge ice bird.

Pheasant beak!

The ice bird flew straight to Marco.

boom!!

There was a loud bang, and the ice bird and the phoenix exploded violently, and it seemed as if fine crystals were falling from the sky.

After these ice crystals fell, they quickly cooled downed the high temperature and froze the sea surface.

In the white mist of the ice burst, Marco spread his wings and flew high, catching Ace falling from the sky with his claws, and flew towards the Moby Dick.

"Where are you going admiral?"

Aokiji still wanted to pursue, but saw a white shadow falling in front of him, so he gave up.

"Monkey D. Luffy..." Aokiji's face was serious.

"Hahaha, thank you for freezing the sea surface, making it easier for them to escape."

Luffy couldn't help laughing.

He also doesn't know if Aokiji did it on purpose.

Just like in the original story, when Luffy was picked up by Law and escaped in a submarine, it was he and Kizaru who surprised people.

The speed of a person freezing the sea cannot catch up with a mere submarine.

One person fired more than 2,000 light-emitting bombs per second, and the bombing continued for nearly ten seconds without hitting a single shot.

To be honest, it is somewhat difficult to do this kind of thing.

At least with Kizaru's powerful Observation Haki, it's much harder to miss than to hit!

Aokiji was speechless for a while.

at the same time.

In front of the huge gully that tore the square, Whitebeard took the lead and stopped tens of thousands of Marines.

"Shoot! This monster has grown weak!"

With a burst of gunfire, dense bullets fell on Whitebeard.

With Whitebeard exhausted, the strength of Armament Haki is rapidly decreasing.

It may have exceeded Iv5 at first, but at this moment, it has dropped to 1.

He shouted loudly, raised the supreme sharp sword in his hand, and slashed forward.

The force of the vibration that was cut out pushed everything in front of it in the shape of a sphere.

boom!

Countless sailors vomited blood and died while screaming, and were directly beaten to death by the force of the shock, with internal bleeding.

"Haho.....haha...."

Whitebeard supported his body with his sword, panting more and more quickly.

Suddenly, his pupils shrank.

A crimson glow appeared on the ground in front of it, and immediately after, a column of magma spurting out.

Akainu gets his hands out of the lava and punches Whitebeard.

Dog bites red lotus!

The molten arm turned into a dog's head, biting Whitebeard's head.

Including the left eye, one-third of the head was sent missing with this punch in an instant!!

"It's not good to be old, Whitebeard!!"

Akainu's face was covered with blood, and he sneered.

The scene was quiet for a while, and after a while, the Marines burst into loud cheers.

"Dead! Won! Admiral Akainu won!!"

However, the next second.

Whitebeard, who only had one right eye left, suddenly opened his eyes wide with bloodshot.

With the sword holding in his right hand, slashed down brazenly!
puff!

The lava-formed Akainu was also difficult to dodge, and it was even more unexpected that the torn wound extended from one of his left shoulders to the lower right abdomen.

Blood rush!

"pft...!" Akainu spat out blood, staggering back two steps.

The cheers stopped abruptly, and the Marines' eyes widened in disbelief.

"Old monster!! Head is gone!! Not dead yet!!?"

Whitebeard stared at Akainu in front of him in the last twilight of his life.

He overdraws his life force and uses his own Haki.

Raising the naginata with both hands, he slashed at Akainu again.

"Magma Imp!!"

At that moment, a golden light flashed across, and the hole grabbed Whitebeard's chest.

Whitebeard was shocked all over, and he charged for a slash, and froze suddenly when he wanted to slash Akainu to death.

"It's full of holes, Whitebeard."

In the distance, Kizaru maintained the movement of extending his right index finger, while scratching his head, he lazily said: "This shot can hit, but I am quite surprised."

His attacks are at the speed of light.

Logia Sparkling fruit!

But any attack has a preparation action and a process of launching abilities.

If it was an ordinary Whitebeard, even an old man in his seventies would not be shot and injured like this.

But at this time, Whitebeard, who was almost exhausted, could not even maintain a large-scale Observation Haki.

Whitebeard swayed, taking a step from side to side.

Boom!

His huge sword hit the ground heavily, supporting him from falling down.

"Cough...cough cough..."

With a cough, a large stream of blood spilled from his mouth.

At this time, a figure flashed.

Luffy came to the top of the crowd, eyeing Whitebeard, and Observation Haki locked on to him.

It can be clearly felt that Whitebeard's breath is falling rapidly.

Just like a lamp in the dark, the flame is getting smaller and smaller, gradually being swallowed by the darkness.

"Is he really dead this time?" A Rear Admiral yelled in disbelief: "Shoot! Shoot him! Kill this old monster for real!!!"

Kakaka.

The soldiers in the distance, the soldiers in all directions, like weeds, the Marine soldiers raised their guns one after another...

"No."

Akainu panted heavily, he knelt on one knee, resting on his knee with one hand, staring at Whitebeard sharply:

"He's unconscious!"

Before he died, he counterattacked and slashed him, almost being hacked to death!

At this time, the blood flowing from his chest dyed the ground under his feet red.

Luffy stood in mid-air without saying a word.

Gently raising his hand, a white light flashed, and a fruit appeared in his heart out of thin air.

Blank fruit!

After the person with the ability dies, the ability to regenerate is intercepted and transformed into the corresponding Devil Fruit.

At this moment, the fruit has not changed.

Suddenly, wild and proud laughter sounded.

"Thief hahaha, are you dead? Dad."

Blackbeard appeared at the head of a host of prisoners.

Those prisoners were once all famous and strong men.

"Demon Heir" Douglas Bullet, former member of the Roger Pirates!

"Corrupt King" Avalo Pizarro!

"Crescent Moon Hunter" Catrina Devon!

"Heavy Drinker" Vasco Shot!

"Colossal Battleship" Sanjuan Wolf

Besides that...

Former Impel down Warden Chief, Shiryu of the Rain!

"Champion" Jesus Burgess!

"Demon Sheriff" Laffitte!

"Death God" Doc Q, and his sick horse Stronger!

After these famous pirates, there are more existences that Luffy does not know.

"At least not him..." Suddenly, a nearly extinguished light in the darkness, as if returning to the light, rekindled the fire.

Whitebeard's voice was weak and husky.

Blackbeard and the others were taken aback, each one showing unbelievable expressions.

"Impossible, still not dead?"

"In the perception of Haki, he is so weak like a dead man!"

Blackbeard took half a step back subconsciously, a fearful look appeared on his blood-stained face.

"Not you, the one Roger has predicted, at least not you, a traitor"

"One day there will be people who bear the history of the past hundreds of years, and one day in the future, people who will challenge the world."

"Sengoku...Your world government is afraid that one day there will be a huge battle that will sweep the world and tear the Celestial Dragons from their thrones!"

"Although I'm not interested, someone will find it, that huge treasure
Everyone couldn't believe it.

Anyone who has mastered the Observation Haki will find it incredible.

The breath in perception, Whitebeard, who had almost disappeared, could still burst out such willpower in the end.

"Straw Hat Luffy..."

Suddenly, Whitebeard struggled to raise his head, and his gradually loose eyes fell on Luffy. To be precise, he was looking at the straw hat tied around Luffy's neck.

Memories flooded his mind.

Under the sunlight at 10:07 in the morning, that figure was as dazzling as the sun.

"I appreciate that straw hat fits you perfectly! Are you going to Laugh Tale?"

Hearing this, Luffy nodded slightly.

Whitebeard grinned, took a deep breath, and shouted with the last of his life:

"ONE-PIECE IS.....REAL!!!"

The shouts resounded through the sky and spread throughout the battlefield.

Everyone has heard this sentence.

Moby Dick aboard.

Ace knelt down with a plop and kowtowed towards the square.

His face was full of tears, his clenched fists were full of unwillingness, he only hated himself for being so powerless and weak.

"Father.....!"

Many captains burst into tears.

Luffy's face was calm, his eyes lowered, and the fruit in his palm gradually gave birth to a spiral pattern.

Shock Fruit, reborn!

"Thief hahaha... really beautiful last words!"

In the atmosphere where even Marine was silent, Blackbeard spread his hands and laughed.

A symbol of an era, the legendary great pirate, one of the Four Emperors in today's world, Whitebeard Edward Newgate...

dead!

Although dead, he is unyielding.

The majestic figure of fighting against the enemy even with scars all over

his body, It's a monster, His back is still full of dignity, The scars all over his body are the glory of being a captain, Well deserved, "the strongest man in the world"!

Chapter 104: Crazy Blackbeard!

Luffy's White Ape Gun! Crumbling

Naval Headquarters!

The cloak slipped off Whitebeard's shoulders, leaving no scars on his bare back.

Only the logo of the Whitebeard Pirates.

And this scene was recorded in the eyes of a phone bug.

"Captain Buggy, is Whitebeard really dead?" The prisoners gathered around Buggy.

Die, died!

Really dead, that monster Whitebeard?!

Sweat dripped down Buggy's forehead.

The group of prisoners around him was just released by him so that he could escape from the prison.

As a result, they somehow followed Blackbeard to Marineford.

After seeing Whitebeard, these bastards encouraged him to take Whitebeard's head.

Thanks to his wit!

Relying on his slippery three-inch tongue, he successfully stabilized this group of vicious gangsters.

"If you die you die, there's nothing I can do. What a pity, I was planning to give him the final blow! Kizaru, that guy, got ahead!"

Buggy put his hands on his chest and laughed awkwardly.

Laugh and leave.

Whoever loves to stay in this deadly place stays here. Sooner or later, he

will be involved in the war if he stays here, and he will die without knowing how.

If he wants to run, he must do it now!

"Captain Buggy, where are you going? That dog Kizaru dared to snatch your prey, just kill him here!" A prisoner suggested viciously.

Scared!?

The cold sweat on Buggy's forehead was like a waterfall.[Who the hell is the prey!]

"Yeah yeah, Captain Buggy, this is absolutely unbearable!"

"Yes, I can't bear it!"

"We all support you, Captain Buggy! This is the critical moment for you to show your strength!"

[Don't be silly, that's the highest strength of Marine, Marine Admiral!]

Buggy cursed from the bottom of his heart, turned his head and yelled, and continued to run: "Just, just let him go once, next time we meet, I will never let him go.....?!"

With a bang, it suddenly bumped into something.

" Which blind basta...!"

Buggy was so angry that he turned his head and wanted to curse, almost spitting on other people's faces.

But when he saw clearly what he bumped into, he opened his mouth wide:

"Ss... Shanks?!"

The redhead had a serious face, looked away from Whitebeard's body, and then smiled faintly:

"Yo, Buggy, how are you?"

"What's okay? Why are you bastard here!"

Buggy separated his hands, grabbed the red-haired collar, and said

angrily: "It was you, the bastard, who turned me into a land duck!"

"Haha, I'm sorry, this happened so many years ago, I almost forgot it"

The redhead smiled.

This scene was seen by the little brothers again, all of whom showed extremely admiring eyes.

"As expected of Captain Buggy, he even quarreled with that Four Emperors, the red-haired Shanks!?"

"No no no, wait, why another Four Emperors!?"

"Could it be that... the war has just begun?"

The prisoners finally felt a little nervous.

Gulp..., swallowing saliva.

Buggy's Phone Bug faithfully records everything.

The news of the death of Four Emperors Whitebeard spread throughout the world in a blink of an eye.

Sabaody Archipelago.

roof.

The old man held a small jug in his hand, and looked at the live broadcast with tears in his eyes.

Of the three large screens, only the middle one is still lit.

Whitebeard in the picture, as well as Whitebeard's last words before his death, are clearly conveyed here.

"Let's go, Whitebeard." He said with a smile: "Go in peace, it's a beautiful last word."

The people who were also watching the live broadcast had expressions of disbelief.

"Is that Whitebeard.....really! really! really! dead?"

"Really dead! That Buggy confirmed!"

"Who the hell is that Buggy?"

"T..."

Different from the reaction of the public, the reporters immediately picked up their respective phone bugs and dialed the number of Naval Headquarters impatiently.

"This is Sabaody Archipelago. I am a reporter from shining. Is Whitebeard really dead? I want to know the exact news!"

The Supernova Pirates also witnessed history.

Everyone's expression is different.

Some were silent, some were excited, some were laughing.

But no one left, because, the war is not over yet.

Marineford, before the ruins of the execution stand.

Sengoku suddenly received the report, and his complexion changed drastically:

"What did you say? The live stream was not cut off!?"

"Yes! After we disconnected and reconnected about a few minutes later, a reporter from Sabaody Archipelago just called to confirm Whitebeard's situation."

"Damn...!"

Sengoku's face darkened.

No need to ask, there must be a video phone bug missing.

Cutting off the live broadcast is the command above.

"Go find it!" Sengoku shouted in a deep voice.

"Yes Yes!"

at the same time.

In front of Whitebeard's body.

Blackbeard's gang suddenly approached, and several subordinates covered Whitebeard with a huge black cloth.

"what are you up to?"

Aokiji steps forward.

Unlike Akainu, who is covered in blood, there are hardly any stains on his clothes.

"Thief hahaha, Aokiji?" Blackbeard grinned: "Thank you, if it wasn't for you, I wouldn't have entered Impel down so easily!"

Aokiji was silent.

When this group of people was arrested at sea before, he didn't realize that this guy was a capable person at all.

After all, they were frozen in a second.

Hidden really deep!

"The Gate of Justice is also your fault?"

Aokiji narrowed his eyes and suspected the straw hats before, but now it seems that this is the mastermind behind the scenes.

"Did you like my performance?" Laffitte took off his hat and bowed gracefully: "On the warship escorting Ace, I found a few people to hypnosis."

Aokiji is no longer asking, there is no need for him to continue.

"Since you are a prisoner, you should stay in prison honestly.

His whole body began to overflow with cold air.

"Thief hahaha, don't be so impatient, Aokiji, the grand performance has just begun!"

Blackbeard laughed twice, lifted the black cloth and walked in.

Afterwards, many pirates stood in front of the black cloth one after another.

The heavy drinker Vaso Shot burped drunkenly: "A delicious dinner always comes at the end."

Catarina Devon licked her lips, staring straight at Aokiji:

"Murunfuffuffu~ The man is really impatient, do you want me to play

with you?"

Shiryu of the Rain was smoking an unfinished cigar, and said neither salty nor light: "If you fail, will you disband on the spot?"

What are these people doing?

Aokiji frowned.

Not only him, but others also realized something was wrong.

Akainu blocked his wound with magma, stood up and faced everyone in Blackbeard group, and snorted coldly: "Hmph, a group of criminal sewer rats can only do some dark tricks!"

Bullet took a step forward without saying a word, his eyes suddenly fixed.

Boom!!

A wave of Conqueror's Haki was released overwhelmingly towards the Marine side.

Luffy played with the Shock Fruit in his hand, amused by the farce below.

But, to be honest, he was also curious.

Can Blackbeard still get the force zone after he intercepts the Shock Fruit?

He came to Summit War for two reasons.

Rescue Ace, get Shock Fruit, all have been achieved at this moment.

Logically speaking, as the final winner, he should run away now.

However, he had other things on his mind about Blackbeard's presence.

Observe quietly.

"Not done yet? Blackbeard." Shiryu waited impatiently, "There are Marine Admirals ready to pounce."

Among the black cloth, Blackbeard looked dazed.

Why no response?!

Whitebeard's Shock Fruit, is this glue a big deal?!

impossible!

How can it be!

Even if the fruit is to regenerate, it will not be so fast!

Blackbeard's face was livid, and he tried two more times, but there was still no feedback.

He secretly thought something was wrong!

This group of prisoners didn't recognize him as the captain, they just obeyed his instructions because of their interests.

Once the interests are gone, he can't control this group of vicious guys.

No, maybe he will be eaten back!

Blackbeard broke out in a cold sweat.

This is not right!

Beyond the black cloth.

Akainu's eyes are not good, and his arms have turned into molten rock.

"The escaped prisoner did not flee to the sea immediately, but deliberately ran to the center of the battlefield, and covered Whitebeard's body with a black cloth...!"

Before he could make a move, Luffy had already made a move.

With a flash, Luffy reached out and lifted the black cloth.

Blackbeard's gang was taken aback.

This guy came from the air, and his speed was extremely fast, and they couldn't react for a while.

"etc.....!"

Blackbeard felt the darkness around him fade away, and the sun shone on him again, and his heart skipped a beat.

Sensing his expression, Shiryu frowned:

"Failed?"

"No, something went wrong!" Blackbeard gritted his teeth, "Someone took the things first!"

Everyone: "..."

Although what was said was true, it seemed to be a joke to the ears of the prisoners at this moment.

Bullet suddenly turned around and stared coldly: "Failed?"

"You'd better be kidding, Blackbeard!" Shiryu grimaced.

"Really..." Blackbeard opened his mouth, feeling like he couldn't explain it.

How did these people gather at the beginning, and how did these people leave at this moment.

"Hmph! A silly trick!"

Bullet snorted angrily, "It's time for the so-called Blackbeard Pirates to disband!"

Without any nonsense, run away as soon as possible.

You know, they are prison escapees, and the location they are in now is Naval Headquarters!

If they don't run, will they wait to be caught?

The many pirates gathered around Blackbeard ran away in a blink of an eye.

Everyone is a smart person, if you stay here and fight with Marine, then you have a brain problem!

As for Blackbeard, although it is very uncomfortable to be cheated, now is not the time to settle accounts.

"Damn bastard, thief remembers you!"

"Dead black pig, what he said in prison was really nice!"

"Murunfuffuffu... It's really sad to be cheated by a man again

Some prisoners ran away without staying for a second.

Only three people and a sick horse remained.

Now, Lian Latt was stunned:

"What, what should I do? Captain, this is not the time to be joking!"

Blackbeard was dripping with cold sweat, looking at Akainu and Aokiji who were close at hand, he also turned and ran away.

"Damn it! Run first!"

He yelled and slipped away.

"Ha ha ha ha."

Luffy couldn't stop laughing, moved his body, and immediately chased after him.

At the same time.

Akainu snorted coldly, his body gradually turned into flowing magma, and he wanted to catch up.

"Wait, Akainu!" Vice Admiral Crane yelled immediately: "Don't worry about those prisoners, the target is Straw Hat Luffy, it's an order from above!"

Hearing this, Akainu's complexion changed, and he immediately changed his target.

Like a volcanic eruption, a column of magma rose into the sky.

"The traitor still wants to leave?"

Akainu condensed half of his body from the magma, seeing that he couldn't catch up with Luffy's speed, he immediately punched him.

"Great Eruption!"

The huge lava fist rose at the sight of the wind.

Luffy paused, turned around immediately, and met with fists.

The moment he used haki, he can see the future.

A red figure appeared in front of him like lightning, blocking Akainu's blow with a single knife.

Seeing this person's appearance, All the Marines' complexions changed drastically.

"Impossible!" Sengoku's eyes widened: "How could you appear here, weren't he fighting against Kaido in New World three days ago..... red haired Shanks!!"

The red-haired man looked calm, and after blocking the attack for Luffy, he said calmly:

"Whitebeard is dead, and you should be satisfied.

"This is not possible..."

Not far away, Kizaru stretched out his index finger, and the golden light emitted from his fingertips continued to lock on Luffy: "It's true that the original Seven Warlords of the Sea, Monkey D. Has completely tricked the marines. "

The golden light gathered and gradually became shining.

A lot of nonsense, five minutes to read.

Suddenly, a short gun locked on him from a distance.

Benn Beckman sits on a piece of rubble, holds a gun in one hand, and holds a toothpick in his mouth:

"Stay still, Kizaru."

"Terrible, terrible, really terrible..."

Kizaru's face froze, and he immediately saluted like a soldier, holding up the flag.

Looking past Beckman, on the iron wall behind him, a group of pirates were either standing or squatting, looking at themselves with unfriendly expressions.

"Red Hair Pirates...all here!" Vice Admiral Flying Squirrel, gasped.

Pirate scum, Akainu's face was ugly: "What do you mean? Red hair!"

Stepping out of the lava, Akainu faced today's second Four Emperors.

"If you still want to fight, let me be your opponent!" the red hair said calmly.

Sengoku clenched his fists and stared at Shanks.

The scene stabilized instantly.

Luffy had a speechless expression on his face.

Glancing in the direction of Blackbeard's escape, he sighed:

" Too annoying. Give you some sunshine and you wanna fly. Give you some color and you want to open a dyeing workshop right?"

Luffy was no longer as relaxed as usual, and his expression became cold.

Shanks was stunned for a moment, and couldn't help but look back.

"Giantification!"

Luffy jumped up, and in an instant, his body swelled, and he turned into a sky giant hundreds of meters away!

Seeing this scene, everyone's pupils shrank suddenly.

"What's this!?" Sengoku looked blank.

The three Admirals stared up, each one dumbfounded.

"Why don't I just... kill all of you Marines here?"

Grinning, Luffy landed a punch.

"White Ape King Spear!!!"

A terrifying punch fell from the sky.

Sengoku's expression changed drastically, revealing the form of a giant Buddha for the first time.

Shockwave!

The golden Buddha slapped his palm towards the sky.

It's just that, in front of the fifth gear's Tyrant form, it can only block a tiny part .

boom!!!

Accompanied by a deafening bang, Sengoku's Buddha body was blown

away, and the Naval Headquarters fortress behind him was instantly reduced to dust.

The islands are shaking!

The shock wave swept across, and in a blink of an eye, the entire square was razed to the ground.

Countless warships disintegrated in the impact.

With one punch, Naval Headquarters collapses!.

Chapter 105 The War Is Over!

Luffy's Second Fruit Ability: Shock

Fruit!

The huge fist shattered the Naval Headquarters fortress.

For hundreds of years, the fortress of justice that has been guarding this world has been destroyed many times, but it has never been as serious as it is now.

It completely disappeared on this island.

Under Luffy's gigantic punch, a strong earthquake occurred on the entire island, and the Inner Bay Square, including a large area behind the execution platform, was torn apart by this blow.

boom!!

The vibration sound can even be transmitted tens of kilometers away.

The shock wave shattered the ice in the inner bay, and the circled waves were tens of hundreds of meters high.

The many pirate ships that were fleeing, and the pirates on them also looked back one after another.

That gigantic white figure was clearly imprinted in everyone's eyes.

Moby Dick.

"Luffy.....!" Ace stared blankly at the scene in the distance.

"So strong! What a guy, Ace, your brother's fighting power is comparable

to that of our pops!" Marko was shocked.

The shaking lasted for a while.

A square completely reduced to ruins.

Doflamingo pushed a boulder away from him, got up and saw the razed scene.

"What a destructive force..."

Such a large Naval Headquarters, I really can't even see the shadow at all, leaving only an empty ruin.

He gasped, feeling horrified: "Isn't this an ordinary Zoan! Phantom beast species? Never heard of such Devil Fruit!"

He has seen the ancient Devil Fruit illustrated book, but there is no such fruit comparison at all.

There is a fruit called "big fruit", which can make the ability bigger.

But not white, and that's still Paramecia.

Could it be some kind of special racial bloodline?

If it's white, the Lunarian tribe?

That's not right either, there is no signature flame.

Doflamingo was lost in thought.

"Monster!" Suddenly, he chuckled twice: "In the new era after

Whitebeard's death, new monsters appear immediately, ehrrrrrrrr..."

the other side.

Hawkeye also got up from the ruins, and when he looked at Luffy's huge figure, he not only recalled the brief fight in East Blue.

"Captain of the Straw Hat Pirates, Monkey D.Luffy..."

He thought to himself.

If the captain has this kind of strength, the captain of the first team, the swordsman who wants to challenge him, will become a real strong man sooner or later, right?

The corners of Hawkeye's mouth turned up, and suddenly there was great anticipation.

Thinking so, he turned and left.

"You're leaving?" Doflamingo frowned.

"The war is over and there is no point in staying here.

Hawkeye left without looking back.

"Cough cough...."

Under the ruins behind Doflamingo, coughing sounded.

Then, with a bang, Moria crawled out from the endless rubble.

His forehead was bleeding, and his face was very ugly: "Straw hat Luffy, this kid got me in too!"

"Furfurfur... If you are dissatisfied, he is over there, and you can directly settle accounts with him!"

Moria is speechless.

Settle accounts?

This kid is a monster, just like Whitebeard!

Now that Whitebeard is dead, this guy has given up the title of Shichibukai, maybe the new Four Emperors is him.

And at a position farther away from the two of them.

Shemale king Ivankov got up, opened his mouth wide, and looked at the ruined land with horror on his face.

"What a terrible attack! Fortunately, it was a fortress. If it landed on the square, I wouldn't dare to think about it! Who is this kid?"

He shook his head, still in disbelief.

Suddenly, an indifferent voice came from behind:

"His name is Monkey D. Luffy, Son of the Dragon.

Ivankov froze all over, turned around suddenly, and assumed a fighting stance: "I see, the son of the dragon... the dragon?!"

The dragon? The leader of the Revolutionary Army? His old friend?

Ivankov was completely dumbfounded by the shocking facts.

The next moment, Kuma's figure flashed, he approached in an instant, and whispered in his ear:

"He asked me to deliver an important message, but I'm running out of time. After the war, I'm afraid I won't be me."

Ivankov's pupils shrank.

The intelligence that comes from the ears is simply unbelievable.

"What you said is true?"

"Bye now."

Xiong remained expressionless, and patted Ivankov with his outstretched right palm.

The meat ball in the palm has the power to bounce everything away.

Paramecia Meat Ball Fruit!

"hey...]....."

With only time to leave a word, Ivankov disappeared from the battlefield in an instant.

In front of Whitebeard's body.

The redhead protected the corpse with Haki, and looked up at the huge Luffy at the same moment, stunned.

"That's what Captain Roger said..."

He touched his empty left arm with a smile on his face.

[I lost it for the new era!]

Won!

He can't help but recall ten years ago, when he met Luffy for the first time in Windmill Village.

[Hey...kid do you want to overtake us?]

[Then I will leave this hat with you. This is my most important hat. One

day I will come and get it back, when you become the best pirate!]

Luffy, you are already a great pirate!

"Hahahaha....Hey, Luffy!"

The red hair shouted towards the sky: "Is it a little bit too much? That is the fortress of Naval Headquarters. If you do this kind of thing, the government will not let you go."

[The government didn't intend to let me go... You are deliberately pretending to be stupid right.] Luffy cursed in his heart, looked down at the little ant, grinned and said:

"Shanks, let's just team up and kill all these annoying Marines."

"Ha ha ha ha."

Shanks laughed: "Sinking Marineford, which has kept the order of the sea for hundreds of years? That's a good idea!"

Just to match Luffy's jokes, he said nonchalantly.

But Luffy is half serious.

Since the Nika fruit has been exposed, Marine which follows the World Government is the enemy, and it is best to deal with the enemy and kill them as much as possible.

Between the two of them talking.

A burst of magma suddenly erupted from the ground.

Akainu, who was covered in lava, walked out of the magma pillar step by step with a cold face.

Crimson magma dripped continuously from his body, and every time he took a step, the ground under his feet would turn into a sea of magma.

"Sinking Marineford? Straw Hat Luffy, you're dishonoring justice, I won't let you go!"

Then, a golden light flashed.

On Akainu's left hand side, Kizaru's body is rapidly condensing into

shape.

"Terrible, two big pirates with Four Emperors fighting power join forces?"

Kizaru, who was talking casually, still had a lazy posture.

At the same time, Aokiji walked step by step with a headache expression on his face.

"The headquarters has become like this, do you still want to sell jokes?"

In a blink of an eye, three Admirals stood side by side, blocking in front of the red hair.

The red-haired man looked serious, and an almost substantive Conqueror's Haki erupted from his body.

boom!!

Black and red lightning, like a devil's touch, filled the surrounding space.

The top Conqueror's even shook the ground.

"Please give me some face, today's war is over!"

Luffy's body shrank back to normal in an instant, walked to the side of the red hair, laughed and said:

"I haven't seen you in ten years, your Face Fruit and Haki has developed so much , Shanks."

Shanks: "..."

The next moment, everyone from the Red Hair Pirates came behind them.

Beckman yelled, spat out the toothpick in his mouth, raised the short gun in his hand, and pointed at the three Admirals:

"If the trouble continues, then we will fight to the end, Marine."

All of a sudden, the scene was tense.

Whitebeard's death, as if not the end, but the beginning.

Kizaru's body began to shine golden.

Aokiji's cold air spread rapidly.

Akainu's eyes were cold, and the sea of magma was spreading under his feet.

"So be it."

Suddenly, Sengoku's voice came from behind the three of them.

His cloak was gone, and the clothes on his upper body were torn off, revealing a traumatized body.

It was destroyed by the previous punch.

"Enough is enough. If we continue to fight, the losses will be too heavy.

Our biggest goal has been achieved, and the troubles...let's stop here.

Sengoku clenched his fists tightly, staring at Luffy, feeling extremely angry inside.

[This bastard!

How dare you smash into pieces the fortress that has stood in the world for hundreds of years and symbolizes Marine justice!!]

At the moment, Sengoku can only endure.

During Observation Haki's listening, the island was full of wailing sounds, and there were dying pirates who had no time to escape.

There are also a large number of marines involved in the attack just now.

"The war is over." He let go of his fist and said tiredly: "I'm all responsible, straw hat Luffy, red-haired Shanks, let's stop!"

Hearing this, Haki of Shanks immediately dispersed, smiled and said:

"That's best. Whitebeard's body, I'll take it with us."

As he spoke, he turned around and spoke to his subordinates: "Hurry up and move the body away, Luffy, let's go, hahahaha, do you really want to sink this island?"

He reached out and rubbed Luffy's head, and took him away with a smile.

Luffy secretly thought it was a pity.

"Luffy, I haven't seen you in ten years, you've become stronger." Big fat

Lucky Roux said with a smile.

"Luffy, you have become like the boss, full of Haki, you are no longer the crybaby, hahaha.

"Luffy, I was really surprised to see you become a Shichibukai!"

The crew members of the red-haired regiment gathered around one after another and greeted Luffy who had been away for a long time.

"Since when have I been a crybaby?"

"You don't wanna admit it, boss, this kid has completely forgotten."

"It's okay, let him remember it while we drink later!"

A group of people laughed and left.

Only Beckman and Gab stayed where they were.

They really can't stand these people....

Beckman had no choice but to say to his companions: "Gab, help me bring Whitebeard back.

Soon, under the gaze of Sengoku and the three Admirals, the crowd disappeared into the square.

Aokiji thought in confusion:

"Killed Whitebeard, did it really mean anything?"

Pirates are like weeds that can't be killed, they will pop up again overnight.

Four Emperors lost a Whitebeard, but added a straw hat Luffy.

Maybe there is no such title now, but with this kid's strength, it won't be long.

Soon after.

Red Hair pirate ship.

Whitebeard's body was loaded onto the boat.

On the deck, the red hair and others warmly entertained Luffy, and the delicious food and wine were served, and everyone sat on the floor,

creating a very lively atmosphere.

"Yasopp, your son Usopp is on my ship, and is still in the capital of seven waters."

Son? Really! Did Usopp go to sea too? Hahahaha, sure enough men can't refuse the call of the sea!"

Luffy despised

I glanced at this guy.

The person who abandoned his wife and children also had the nerve to say such that. If it were him, he would simply take his wife and children with him.

"... "Drink, drink, Luffy, you are 17 years old now, you can drink freely!"

People kept trying to persuade them to drink.

In this regard, Luffy can only helplessly be poured one cup after another.

Three rounds of wine, five flavors of food.

He suddenly remembered something.

Forget about Blackbeard!

Forget it, let's talk about it next time.

"By the way, Shanks, do you know where Elegia is?"

The atmosphere suddenly froze.

Shanks held a large bowl of wine and put it to his mouth, he was stunned for a while, and then he smiled and said:

"Elegia, what's wrong?"

"I already knew what happened ten years ago. You left Uta there, and I'm going to find her."

Luffy said calmly.

That is a childhood sweetheart, a singer with fruit ability, a very powerful and potential fruit ability.

He plans to go there when he has time.

Shanks fell silent.

"Boss."

"Luffy!"

"There was a reason for what happened back then.

Someone tried to explain, but was stopped by the redhead.

He smiled slightly, took out a record pointer from his chest, and threw it to Luffy:

"This is Elegia's eternal pointer, Luffy, if you see Uta, please help me and say sorry to her.

And this thing? Take it with you?

Luffy looked surprised.

"Next, we're going to find Whitebeard's sons and return the body to them.

Luffy, what's your plan?" The redhead deliberately changed the topic, not wanting to mention Uta.

"I have to go back to the capital of seven waters as soon as possible."

Hearing this, Luffy stood up, "My companions are still there, I'm afraid there will be some troubles in the future."

The fruit of Nika has been exposed to the whole world, and the next voyage will not be as peaceful as before.

He walked to the side of the boat and immediately activated the Nika form.

"I already know about this fruit, Shanks, see you in New World!"

"See you in New World!"

The reunion was very short, and when they parted, no one spoke to persuade them to stay.

Everyone has their own adventures and there is no point in holding back.

The next moment, Luffy turned into a white light and flew away in an instant.

"Boss, is Luffy in danger?"

"With his strength, he can overcome it." Shanks drank the wine in his hand in one gulp, and said: "This kid is already very strong, maybe even I am no match."

"Hahahaha~"

Everyone laughed.

On the other side, Luffy found a direction and flew straight away.

He took out the Shock Fruit hanging from his waist.

"A person can only eat one Devil Fruit, and if he eats two, he will explode and die."

"Blackbeard can have double fruits because of his abnormal body, the specifics are unknown."

"But Four Emperors Kaido has been arrested many times. It's said if someone eat two fruits, he may die on the spot. But why Marine didn't kill Kaido this way!"

So, the answer is obvious.

Exploding to death may be true, but that is only for ordinary people.

As long as the body is strong enough, some might be able to carry it. But there must be some unknown effect.

With a flash of white light, a self-healing fruit appeared in Luffy's hand.

That's right, the current fruit!

In the previous Summit War, he gave the Empress one and said "only one for now".

That's a lie.

In fact, he still has one.

During his seven days at Naval Headquarters, he refreshed the store every day.

At this time, a self-healing fruit deliberately left behind is for the present.

"I originally planned to press Blackbeard about the secret of the fruit.

"Unfortunately, interrupted by Akainu."

"But it doesn't matter, this is a Shock Fruit evolved from a blank fruit, and it has no side effects."

"If there will still be a conflict because of the double fruit [I can fight it with my physique!]"

"If you can't resist, just eat a self-healing fruit!"

Everything seems perfect as planned.

Without hesitation, Luffy opened his mouth and bit down.

The next moment, he awakened the power of Shock Fruit!

Chapter 106 The Queen's Promise,

Luffy's 3.5 Billion Reward

After taking the first bite of Tremor Fruit, Luffy's heart beat violently.

Boom.

A new force was born in the body.

"It turns out that the unpalatable taste is also a side effect... Now the taste is surprisingly good."

Luffy chewed the pulp and ate up the Tremor Fruit bit by bit, just as he was hungry.

No wonder Nami and Vivi didn't mention the unpalatable taste of the Devil Fruit.

Even "unpalatable" is a side effect, which is a bit outrageous.

"Successful, the Devil Fruit evolved from the blank fruit will not conflict with the original ability."

After eating the pulp, the peel is really not tasty, so Luffy throws it away and feeds it to the fish.

"This means that I can continue to eat...have a third, or even a fourth, fifth ability?"

Luffy flicked one arm and punched out.

boom!

In an instant, the atmosphere cracked, the power of the tremor spread away, and the sea below suddenly set off huge waves.

seaquake!

Reproduced Whitebeard's moves, just a single punch can set off a huge wave, but the disadvantage is that it consumes a lot of physical strength.

Of course, this is not a big problem. He who has the Sunshine Fruit, as long as he is in the daytime, his physical strength is unlimited.

"Is it possible to eat an awakening fruit to awaken Tremor Fruit? Not yet, try it when you have a chance."

Thinking of this, Luffy looked down at another fruit in his hand.

Self-healing fruit.

This is a preparation for safety, but in the end it was not used.

Putting it away, Luffy looked for a direction and accelerated on his way.

ten minutes later.

After flying for a while, but the four directions as far as the eye can see are still the vast ocean.

"..... lost?!"

[I used to laugh at Moss Head gor getting lost, but I never thought I would have such a day.]

Luffy stood in the sky at an altitude of six or seven hundred meters,

Observation Haki listened to the surroundings, and suddenly heard a lot of good breaths.

Immediately stare into the distance.

"Huh? That's..."

In the extreme distance of the field of vision, a small black dot can be seen.

Luffy quickly approached, and the black dot magnified in view.

It was a pirate ship, and two huge sea beasts sailed the ship.

Nine Snake Pirates, Perfume Snake.

With a slight smile, Luffy immediately accelerated and rushed over.

Naval Headquarters, Marineford.

Marines are busy cleaning up the mess and cleaning up the battlefield.

The 100,000 Marine elites suffered countless deaths and injuries, and even many officers at the rank of generals were injured.

"Quick! Move those stones away!" Vice Admiral, the flying squirrel, with his head covered in bandages, commanded his subordinates with a heavy face: "Time is life, the soldiers buried below are still alive, and I can hear voices, hurry up!" " move faster"

"Yes, Vice Admiral."

Similar scenes are happening all over the island.

The ruins of the execution platform.

Sengoku sat on the boulder with his arms bare and weary.

Still remembering the previous war in my mind.

Careless!

Now to review everything, when the three Admirals left their seats one after another, the straw hat Luffy easily approached the execution platform.

[If at that time, I could maintain enough vigilance, I wouldn't let him rescue people easily.]

[The responsibility is on me!]

Sengoku sighed, then, looking slightly sideways.

Garp walked towards him with Zephyr on his arm, both wounded.

Seeing this guy, Sengoku was furious.

"Garp!! Thanks to your grandson! It's ruins all over the place, you

bastard!"

"sorry."

Instead of laughing out loud as usual, Garp apologized in a depressed mood.

Sengoku froze for a moment.

Garp supported Zephyr, and made him sit on the rock as well.

"About this matter... I knew from the very beginning that Luffy was going to save someone, he and Ace were more than blood brothers, I was the one who concealed it.

Garp finally sat down and sighed, "I'll take the responsibility."

"At this point, what's the point of saying these words? You can't bear the responsibility, Garp, I'm the marshal!"

Sengoku has a complex expression, but it's not that he can't understand Garp's mood.

Being caught in the middle is really hard to do.

"Sengoku, you..." Zephyr was stunned, and from Sengoku's tone, he heard something unusual.

"I'm tired. Let the young man take the position of Marshal."

Sengoku spoke blankly.

In this war, Marine killed Whitebeard and achieved the greatest purpose.

But the rest of the above-mentioned goals almost all failed.

Fire Fist Ace was rescued, and the main force of the Whitebeard Pirates remained intact. Although the 43 Pirates suffered heavy losses, they were far from being annihilated.

The prisoners from Impel down have all escaped, and the ordinary prisoners are also ignored, those evil gangsters from Eternal Hell...

The crimes committed by those people are too vicious, they are monster pirates erased from history!

All this needs to be beared by one person.

And it's him Sengoku the Marshal.

"I will submit my resignation to the higher ups..."

Saying so, he looked at Zephyr, frowned and said, "Why are you covered in injuries?"

Zephyr had a bandage on his head, and said helplessly: "I was drinking tea in the headquarters, and I was hit with one fist, and I was almost killed.

"Hahahaha, the old man came to save you at the fastest speed, Zephyr, thank me."

"Isn't that what your grandson did!"

Zephyr's face darkened.

"Don't be angry, do you want to eat senbei?"

the other side.

In front of the inner bay.

Moria commanded a group of zombies and helped him salvage Oz's body.

Thick chains sank into the sea, pulling the corpse upwards little by little.

"Furfurfur...the others are gone, are you still busy here?"

Behind him came Doflamingo's low chuckle.

Moria said without looking back:

"This is a precious corpse, Doflamingo, you can't understand the beauty of zombies, they are invincible soldiers who will never die in battle! It's a pity that Whitebeard's body was taken away by the red-haired guy..."

"Even if you pick it up, how do you transport such a big man?"

"Hehehehe, you don't need to worry about it...!?"

Moria smiled triumphantly, and suddenly, his pupils shrank.

"Dropping Ruffian String!"

Doflamingo raised his arm up and swung it down. Immediately, five

forked silk threads passed through Moria's body obliquely downward from behind.

With a wow, Moria spat out blood.

He turned his head in disbelief and stared at the other party:

"you?!"

"Fufurfur, don't blame me, I also got such an order." Doflamingo took the pace of a street thief, with the corners of his mouth raised, full of sarcasm.

"Sengoku?! Why?"

Moria didn't understand, he obediently obeyed and came to participate in the Summit War.

Although not much effort, although the purpose is for the corpse, but at least there is a little bit of hard work.

"Not him, the higher ups."

Doflamingo grinned, stretched out his finger and pointed to the sky: "I'm also curious, what did you do to make them care?"

Above? Five Elders!?

Moria's complexion changed, and he suddenly thought of something.

"Damn it! Shadow Mage!"

The shadows in the sun quickly elongated and turned into bats flying all over the sky.

Perfume Snake pirate ship.

The captain's boudoir.

The empress sat on the edge of the tent, resting her chin with one hand, muttering dreamily: "Luffy, are you all right?"

The two younger sisters stood in front, looking at each other with helplessness on their faces.

"Sister, the lunch is ready, do you want to bring it in?" Sandersonia said

softly.

It has been almost an hour since they left from the headquarters, and it has been in this state.

"I'm not hungry, compared to this, I'm very worried that Luffy might be targeted in the future." The empress bit her nails, feeling uneasy.

Marigold smiled wryly: "Sister, that bad man is very powerful. We all saw it in the live broadcast. An Admiral can't do anything about him."

"But Marine has three Admirals, and the government also has other powerfull backups." The empress frowned slightly.

"It's all right, don't worry, sister, even if you encounter any danger, doesn't that guy have a lot of magical fruits? There must always be a way. Leave his situation, let's eat some quickly!"

Speaking of fruit, the empress suddenly remembered something.

She took out a small self-healing fruit from her chest, raised her head and said to the two younger sisters:

"Luffy gave me a self-healing fruit. Very effective for removing the mark on your body! But, there is only one for the time being..."

Just as she was speaking, a fourth voice suddenly sounded in the room.

"I just spent ten years of life and got one more."

The three sisters were startled, and immediately looked towards the window.

Luffy graciously jumped in from the window.

""

"Luffy!" The empress's eyes were full of surprise: "Didn't you leave with the red hair?"

[Got lost... thankfully I saw your ship.]

Of course, such words that damage the image cannot be said.

Luffy said: "Suddenly I miss you guys a little bit, so I came to see you. By

the way, is lunch ready?"

At the redhead's place, they were all drunk.

"Sonia, Luffy is hungry, bring the food here!"

The empress immediately gave instructions to her sister.

"Yes... my sis."

Sandersonia reluctantly went out to prepare food.

Marigold glared at him indignantly.

What does it mean to miss some of us, you are just here for dinner!

A hateful man, my elder sister was fascinated by him.

Noticing her gaze, Luffy laughed and took out the previous self-healing fruit:

"Here you go."

The fruit that was originally used to ensure safety is no longer needed.

Throw it to the sister of the empress.

Marigold received the fruit, so she stopped staring at him. She

cannibalize people with foul mouths and treat people softly.

[Thinking about it carefully, my elder sister is pregnant with his child, and sooner or later he will also be a brother-in-law, well, it is appropriate to accept a gift from a brother-in-law, no problem!]

Marigold explained to herself, and immediately said: " Luffy Sama, my sister has been worrying about you the whole time."

"It's really a little troublesome."

Luffy shook his head, sat down at the table, and poured himself a glass of wine.

The empress likes red wine very much, even on the boat, she often drinks it.

The empress quickly got up and sat across the table.

Luffy glanced at her and smiled.

Soon, Sandersonia brought a sumptuous food, and Luffy was not polite, and began to eat happily.

The empress gave her the self-healing fruit in her hand.

"Mary, Sonia, you all have it now, eat it!"

The two sisters were very moved.

To remove that disgusting mark is to bid farewell to the past, and they will never be inferior again.

"Shall I take a look for you?" Luffy teased.

The two gave him a blank look, but they still said:

"Thanks"

"Thank you, Luffy Sama. Sister, we will go to the bathroom to take a shower."

Saying that, the two left together.

Thinking that the three of her sisters would no longer need to deceive the people, nor would they be dominated by that mark, the empress was in a very good mood, and a happy smile appeared on her delicate face.

"Luffy, thank you!"

"How can verbal thanks be enough? You're not sincere, woman."

"Why?"

The Empress was stunned for a moment, sincerity?"

Her brain subconsciously thought about how to express her gratitude.

"Come here, sit on my lap."

Luffy stepped back in the chair a little and patted his thigh.

The queen blinked her eyes and suddenly became nervous.

Sitting on a man's lap... is the first time.

But for Luffy, it's okay, I've been hugged before, and I don't have any special resistance in my heart.

She got up and walked around the dining table, obediently sat on Luffy's

lap, showing some embarrassment.

"Is that all right?" she whispered.

Luffy hugged the Empress's waist generously, and his other hand became restless, feeling the soft big buns.

"Hancock, in my village, when a woman wants to thank the saviour for saving her life, it must be a promise with her body"

If the beauty falls in love with the man, she promises the man with her body.

If the beauty didn't like the man, she becomes an unworthy little girl, and will repay the man as a cow and a horse in her next life.

Thinking of these nonsense, he said with a smile: "I'll teach you what it means to make a promise with your body!"

"?"

The empress was confused, her body felt a little hot, and her face was slightly red.

Her soft and moist lips were sealed. The pair of big eyes were full of moisture, and she was so dizzy that she forgot what to do.

...

the other side.

The two sisters ate the fruit of self-healing in the bathroom, watching each other's backs.

The slave mark that was originally branded on the back has completely disappeared at this moment.

"What a magical power!"

"It really disappeared!"

The two sisters looked at each other and cried out excitedly.

At this moment, Marigold secretly decided not to call Luffy a bad man in his heart anymore.

It's a good man!

Good brother-in-law!

For them, this kind of kindness is greater than the kindness of saving lives.

"Sister Sonia."

"Mary!" Sandersonia wiped away her tears, "you must treat Luffy Sama well from now on."

"Yes, I was rude before."

"Let's go, we have to apologize!"

After the two of them took a shower, put on their clothes, and came to the queen's boudoir again, they showed puzzled expressions.

In the room, there was a strange sound.

"What's wrong, my sis? The sound is so strange." Marigold was at a loss as to whether he should knock on the door or not.

"I don't know, is my sis injured?"

Sandersonia is also unknown.

They looked at each other.

"Let's not disturb Luffy Sama's meal for the time being."

that night.

Luffy woke up in the queen's bed.

When he woke up, the Empress was nowhere to be seen, Observation Haki sensed it, and the girl was taking a bath.

[It is true that we have been exercising all afternoon and her body must be sweating, so it is necessary to take a bath.]

He put on a coat casually, got up and poured himself a cup of tea.

At this time, Guoyin Sonia rushed in hastily.

"My sis! My Luffy Sama!"

"What's wrong?"

Luffy turned to look at them.

He saw Sandersonia holding a newspaper, handed it to him quickly, and said solemnly:

"Luffy Sama, you have been offered a reward by the government again!"

When he took the newspaper, a new reward order fell from the newspaper's interlayer, falling on the floor.

Monkey D. Luffy

life or death

:3.5 Billion!

The photo of the reward order is clearly his Nika form!

Chapter 107 Returning To The

Capital Of Water Seven

Luffy stooped to retrieve the reward order, his gaze settling on it with a sense of nonchalance.

No surprises here.

Soaring from a mere 71 million to the current 3.5 billion bounty, it's safe to say it falls short of expectations.

A robust 4 billion feels more fitting, aligning better with his sheer strength and the escalating threat he poses to the government.

Maybe the reason he hasn't breached that 4 billion mark lies in the absence of a formidable crew, setting him apart from the other Four Emperors.

Now, there are a few changes.

Firstly, the bounty have been from a strict live-capture mandate, transforming to a life or death bounty.

Secondly, the once straightforward photo is replaced into the Ni~ka form, introducing an unexpected layer to the unfolding narrative.

"Luffy Sama, with such a high bounty, there will definitely be a big

Marine Admiral watching you all the time!"

Sandersonia expressed concern.

Luffy put the reward order aside, opened the newspaper and glanced briefly.

The headline on the front page was, of course, the death of Whitebeard.

As the most important news in recent years, Morgans acted very quickly.

What happened in the morning was in the newspapers in the evening.

The article praised Marine's bravery and invincibility, but didn't say a word about the escape of Fire Fist Ace.

win!

Anyone can win!

The newspaper also detailed that he, the former Seven Warlords of the Sea, fought back during the Summit War, destroyed Naval Headquarters, and caused huge casualties to Marine.

Nonsense.

Most of the Marine casualties came from the war itself.

The government is pouring dirty water on him.

Luffy smiled disdainfully.

This is definitely not news written by Morgans, it is definitely inspired by the World Government.

"Luffy."

At this time, the empress who had taken a bath came in with a scent of fragrance after bathing.

Seeing her sister, Sandersonia was surprised.

Compared with the past, the current elder sister seems more... coquettish.

"Hancock, I have to go back to the capital of seven waters as soon as possible, so I won't be with you for now.

Luffy handed her the newspaper, and then asked: "Sonia, which direction

is the capital of the seven waters?"

"The ship is now sailing in the direction of Daughter's Island, the capital of the seven waters... at three o'clock.

"Thanks."

As he said that, Luffy quickly changed his clothes, walked to the window, and opened the Nika form.

Although it is night now, it doesn't matter anymore, and he must rush back as soon as possible.

Oh, it's all the empress's fault, causing him to waste an afternoon and a month of his saved energy.

"Wait, Luffy, I will send you to the capital of seven waters... There is no record pointer on the Grand Line, it is easy to get lost."

The Empress spoke worriedly.

Her face was full of reluctance, after all, the two of them just had an in depth communication.

Luffy shook his head and said, "I'll see you next time, take care, Hancock."

As he spoke, he jumped up and flew away from the window.

In the night sky, the sun streaks across the sky.

The empress hurriedly walked to the window, her slender fingers gripped the newspaper tightly.

"See you soon, Luffy~"

Just as Luffy was rushing to the capital of seven waters.

There are also people traveling in the air.

"What does the bear... mean? After the war, he is not himself anymore?

What the hell happened outside while I was in prison?"

Ivankov scratched his dark purple afro.

A figure emerged from his hair.

The man's hairstyle is similar to the "club blossom" in the playing cards.

The left half of his hair is orange and the right half is white, and he holds a glass of red wine in his left hand.

"Master Ivankov, we can see the island now, it's Baltigo."

"Lightning, it's you, you scared me to death haha~!"

Ivankov was startled, his eyes popped out.

He immediately followed the direction of the lightning and saw an island.

Isle of White Clay, Baltigo.

A barren island full of sand and rocks.

At the same time, it is also the headquarters of the Revolutionary Army.

The transparent bear's paw enveloping the two of them dropped rapidly, and finally landed in front of a base built among the rocks with a "boom".

Before the two got up from the ground.

Under the night, a gust of wind blew by, and a man in a green cloak immediately appeared in front of the two of them.

"Ivankov?"

Dragon said in astonishment: "Just now I suddenly felt two auras, it turned out to be you.

"Dragon, do you have a son?" As soon as they met, Ivankov couldn't help but ask, "Monkey D. Luffy?"

Dragon was silent for a while, then nodded:

"I didn't mention it to you, sorry, but I don't like people prying into my past.

After being confirmed, Ivankov crossed his arms and said with emotion:

"As expected of your son, he is as powerful as a monster. Have you watched the live broadcast of Summit War?"

"Hmm. What's going on with you guys?"

Dragon was silent, looked down at the bear paw-shaped depression under

the two people's feet, and immediately understood.

This is Kuma's ability, it was Kuma who sent the two of them flying.

"By the way, there's something about your son, he has important information..."

Finally remembering the business, Ivankov immediately told Dragon the news that Luffy wanted to convey.

After listening, Long looked shocked.

"Imu? 800 years ago, one of the original 20 Lords who created the world government?"

Such a person does exist.

Not only he, but even Ivankov had heard of the name.

"Is the intelligence true? Have that person lived until now?" Long frowned.

"It was your son who said it, you have to ask him hehe~ Anyway, my mission is completed, that guy Kuma, your subordinates is still in Marineford, won't he be arrested again?"

Ignoring Ivankov's complaints, the dragon fell into deep thought.

It was obvious that Luffy had deliberately asked someone to bring him this kind of information.

After pondering for a moment, he took out an anti-tapping phone bug.

"This is the headquarters of Shijing. I'm Morgans. If you have this number and dare to call, you must have some important news?"

A slightly sharp voice came from the opposite side.

"I am a revolutionary, Dragon."

Far away in the headquarters of the World Economic News Agency in New World.

It was an airship.

In the office, the pupils of "King of News" Morgans suddenly shrank.

Revolutionary Dragon?

Isn't that the leader of the Revolutionary Army!?

"I have important news. Once I report to the public, it will cause a shock all over the world."

Listening to the sound of the phone bug ringing, Morgans became excited:

"Please tell me, the remuneration will definitely satisfy you."

"You don't need to be paid, because once published in the newspaper, you might be hunted down by the world government."

so serious?!

Not only was Morgas not afraid, but he felt his blood was boiling.

"Please tell me!"

"About Celestial Dragons....."

Going back in time a little.

about a month ago.

The capital of seven waters.

On an outlying island in the outer city, there is a "disintegration business" that specializes in dismantling abandoned ships.

Its owner is Franky, and while running this job, he also has a side job as a bounty hunter.

When the Straw Hat Pirates landed on the island, their subordinates also came to report immediately.

"Brother Franky, on the south coast, Seven Warlords of the Sea straw hat Luffy's pirate ship is flying in the sky!! I've never seen such a ship before!"

Franky sat on the dilapidated sofa, holding a bottle of Coke in his hand, and drank heavily.

"A ship flying in the sky?"

"Yes! Not only that, but that ship is made of an unbelievable amount of

gold!"

The subordinates were struggling to describe what they saw.

The appearance of dancing and dancing, seemed extremely excited.

Franky was dumbfounded.

"Impossible, there is so much gold?! According to your description, there must be tens of thousands of tons? Did they find the legendary gold town?"

Tens of thousands of tons sounds like a lot, but it's actually not much.

"It's true, Brother Franky, if you don't believe me, go and see, the ship is hovering over there!"

Under the leadership of the younger brothers, Franky came to the stop of Straw Hat Crew.

Even if it is far away, under the sunlight, the light reflected by the gold is very exciting.

"There are so many!!"

Franky widened his eyes in disbelief, subconsciously began to calculate, how much is this?

The current market price of a ton of gold is about 1 billion beli.

That ship simply has more than 10,000 tons...a total of more than 10 trillion Baileys!!?

Unbelievable wealth is in his sight!

This is simply a invincible wealth, how many islands and countries can be bought with so much money!

Of course, except for some big countries, such as Alabasta.

"Big, big brother, you are not planning to snatch it right?" The younger brother swallowed, "That's a Shichibukai's ship!"

"What is a Shichibukai! Who do you think I am?"

Franky pointed at the Ark Maxim, grinned and said: "Let's go, take me to

meet those pirates and ask them if they need help!"

#: "..."

Franky patted him on the head, "What are you doing in a daze? We are businessmen!"

"Yes, businessman."

The subordinates agreed helplessly, and then led Franky towards Zoro and the others.

Back to the present time.

At night, the capital of seven waters. A small bar.

There is a closed sign on the door of the bar.

But in the bar, there is a group gathered here.

They seem to be attending a masquerade ball, wearing gorgeous but strange costumes, and wearing different hoods on their heads.

The owner of this bar is called Blueno.

He was wearing a black suit and had horn-like hair.

At this time, while wiping the glass, he said honestly:

"What are your plans for tonight?"

One of the voices was female and she said: "According to the investigation, although it cannot be confirmed 100%, but the things are in the hands of the target, the possibility is extremely high. But this month, he was on the golden ship, helping the Straw Hat Crew to transform the ship... The purpose seems to be earning some gold.

The other two looked at each other and spoke one after another. They were both men:

"To be honest, it is indeed a huge sum of money, and it is only natural that that guy would be tempted."

"Don't care about the Shichibukai anymore. This is today's news!"

Spread a newspaper on the table, and at the same time, there is a reward

order.

"Straw hat Luffy's Shichibukai title has been stripped, let's act tonight!"

"3.5 billion!?" The woman was taken aback.

"Whether it's 3.5 billion or 35 billion, I don't think it's important. We have only one goal!"

"What about Nico Robin?"

"Leave her alone."

Can't afford it.

Several people looked at each other.

Blueno puts the glass

Next, he said honestly: "How to do it specifically?"

"Separate action, Kaku and I go to arrest people, you go to Galley-La Company, cause a commotion!"

Hearing this, Blueno bent down and took out a fancy dress from under the bar, and also put on a hood.

Afterwards, the four immediately took action.

Taking advantage of the darkness, they walked in the air without disturbing anyone.

the next day.

When the morning sun shone on the capital of seven waters, Luffy finally arrived at his destination.

From a distance, he saw the Ark Maxim, still suspended in mid-air as it was when he left.

It's just that the ship has changed a lot since he left.

It has become more beautiful.

"Hoo...Finally found it, and almost lost my way to Alabasta again."

Luffy immediately activated the ability of the sunlight fruit, quickly recovering his physical strength.

His return route can be described as twists and turns.

He almost ran to Alabasta, and turned around to find the capital of seven waters, and saw the long Ring island in the middle.

In a place like the Grand Line, it is really impossible to not have a record pointer, even if you can fly, you can easily get lost.

At this time, unfolding his Observation Haki, he was suddenly taken aback.

In his perception, almost everyone in the straw hats gathered on the deck of the Ark Maxim.

"Strange Breath"

Immediately, he hurried over.

Coming to the deck, He immediately saw Nami and Vivi.

"Luffy!" Nami's eyes lit up, and she ran over happily, throwing herself into his arms like a baby swallow returning to its nest.

Sniff!

Sniffing like a puppy waiting for its owner to return, Nami said suspiciously:

"smell good..."

Luffy:"..."

[Phew, I really forgot to take a bath, and the smell of the empress still lingers on my body.]

"Mr. Luffy." Vivi greeted with a smile.

"Luffy!"

"Luffy Sama!"

"Brother Luffy!"

A group of people gathered around.

Luffy immediately changed the subject: "These people..."

Only then did he see that there were four people tightly bound on the

deck, three men and one woman.

Member of World Government's agent cp9.

They are Rob Lucci, Kaku, Kalifa, and Blueno.

"About this, I was going to ask you how to deal with it."

Nami just wanted to explain.

Franky with a hammer came over:

"You're Straw Hat Luffy? These guys came after me, last night..."

Last night, Kaku and Lucci took advantage of the late night to sneak into the Ark Maxim, but they were discovered by Zoro at the first time.

Afterwards, it was naturally defeated by the Straw Hat Crew.

You know, there are more than a dozen capable people here, five of them have completely mastered the six styles, and there are more than eight people who have mastered three of the six styles.

There are only two special agents, nothing more than free food delivery.

On the other hand, Blueno and Kalifa raided the Galley-La Company, trying to force the mayor Iceberg, and they did cause a commotion.

Afterwards, Nami, who rushed, gave a helping second hand to Iceberg.

"I see."

After listening, Luffy found it interesting.

cp9 gave up Robin, but not Franky.

And Franky, coincidentally wanted gold, because of Shichibukai's prestige, he didn't dare to force it, so he had to work to make money.

So, it became what it is now.

Looking at the straw hat Luffy walking towards him and others, Rob

Lucci said in a deep voice:

"We have no intention of making you an enemy, Monkey D. Luffy, just a man named Franky.

Luffy grinned and said: "I know your identities. The person who masters

the six styles is either a Marine or a government agent. I probably know what you are looking for."

Blueprint of Pluton.

Hearing this, the pupils of several people shrank suddenly.

"Give you a chance to choose, join me now and continue to work for me, or die!"

Chapter 108 Heading To The Next

Island, The Knights Of God Are

Dispatched

Facing the choice given by Luffy, the four government agents were all silent.

As spies raised by the government since childhood, their loyalty to the World government is unquestionable.

"Don't rush to answer, I will kindly give you a few days to think."

Luffy said lightly.

He didn't care about the combat power of these people, but the identity of government agents might come in handy.

"Barto."

"Yes, Luffy Sama. Your faithful little brother has been waiting for your gift!"

Bartolomeo came over quickly.

"Prison these few people, and you will take care of them.

"yes!"

After simply dealing with these people, Luffy looked at Franky.

"Are you the one responsible for the transformation of our ship?"

"Such a big ship, how can one person change it into this within a month, the people from the Galley-LA...the two of the people just caught helped."

Franky shook his head replied.

Rob Lucci and Kaku, the superficial identities of these two people in the capital of seven waters, are the foremen of the shipyard of Galley-LACompany.

"So they are government spies?" Franky frowned vaguely.

Being targeted by government spies...Of course he knows what the target is.

"The target is the blueprint for the Ancient Weapon Pluton hidden on you."

Luffy said it in one breath, which immediately surprised everyone.

"Huh? The blueprint for Pluton? The Ancient Weapon?" Usopp opened his mouth wide.

Franky's complexion changed, pretending to be puzzled:

"What are you talking about? Blueprints?"

"More than 800 years ago, the worst warship in the history of shipbuilding, the super battleship built by the capital of seven waters, is now known as Pluton, one of the three ancient weapons.

Luffy smiled and said, "Don't worry, I'm not interested in the blueprint in your hand."

The Pluton that has been built by "as the original" is sleeping in Wanokuni, what does he want the blueprint for?

Even if he want to make it, he don't know how much manpower, material resources, and time it will cost.

The only force in the world that can satisfy these forces is the World Government.

Franky's face darkened.

He didn't understand why the straw hat Luffy would know these... Only he himself knows the secret of the blueprints!

Luffy suddenly yelled.

The next moment, Robin came over and twisted her waist and stuck to Luffy, with a charming expression all over her face.

"Captain Luffy~Slave... Robin is here~"

Luffy has a chill, dead ladyboy, fuck!

The next moment, he heard the authentic Robin's voice from behind.

"Six rounds of blossoms, slap combos!"

He saw six hands suddenly grew from "Robin"'s body, and they slapped herself in the face.

"Aww, aw! What are you doing, Robin! You are going to burn my face~!"

Mr. 2 was slapped into a pig's head, but he didn't dare to resist, and was finally beaten out of his disguise.

"Don't use my appearance to do such embarrassing things." Robin said solemnly: "As a woman, I feel very ashamed.

Mr.5 laughed loudly: "you deserve it, hahaha. Captain, Miss Robin, let me help you teach him a lesson."

Too lazy to talk to Mr. 5, Luffy turned to Robin and said:

"I'll take you to the iceberg and take care of the rest. Nami, is the record pointer ready?"

"The magnetic force here has been preserved for a week, but the pointer is a bit strange, and it is slightly biased downward."

Nami raised her left hand and showed Luffy the record pointer.

The needle pointing to the next island moved slightly downwards.

"The next island it points to is the paradise under the sea, The fish men island."

Luffy explained: "But before that, we have to cross the 'Devil's Triangle Sea Area' first, everyone, get ready, it's time to set sail!"

As he spoke, he wrapped one arm around Robin's waist, and with the other hand grabbed Franky who was trying to escape.

"I'll go to the Carrera Company and settle the 'remuneration' with the mayor!"

The next moment, amidst Franky's yell, he flew towards the central area of the capital of seven waters.

Iceberg suffered some injuries in last night's attack.

At this time, the mayor's mansion.

He was leaning on the bed alone, with a bandage on his forehead, and looked out the window with a serious face.

He recalled the admonition Straw Hat Luffy had whispered in his ear a month ago.

[Your secretary is a government spy]

This sentence came true last night.

The government kept an eye on Pluton's blueprints, even placing spies at his side years ago.

"what to do?"

Iceberg was thinking, without any clue.

With his strength, how should he protect the capital of seven waters and that blueprint.

Last night, it was already clear, and the government must have gradually lost patience.

At this time, a figure rushed in from the window and rolled the curtains.

"Your Excellency Luffy?" Iceberg looked at Franky in Luffy's hand in astonishment, and his expression changed immediately.

"The blueprint is on him."

Luffy said straight to the point: "His craftsmanship is very good, I am going to take him away as a reward for you to rebuild the ship for me, and I will bear the pursuit for the Pluton on behalf of you.

"What?" Iceberg was shocked: "What do you mean?"

Robin showed a sudden look, "I see."

After a pause, she smiled and said, "Mayor Iceberg, our captain means that the blueprint will be handed over to you for safekeeping, and Franky, we will take him away. The government will focus on us, you, and your capital of seven waters will remain safe."

It's really Luffy's way, she thought.

Iceberg said in disbelief:

"Luffy Sama, how do you know this? Franky told you?"

"How could I say such a thing!" Franky resolutely denied: "Iceberg, it wasn't you who told him right?"

Both brothers looked at Luffy together.

Luffy said: "It's not important. I don't need to lie to you, this Nico Robin beside me, you have met before, she is interested in blueprints, I won't talk nonsense with you here."

There are blueprints, if Robin who can read ancient literature...it is indeed possible to resurrect Pluton!

Iceberg understood what he meant, and stood up from the bed at once:

"Why are you going to this extent for us?"

"I already told you, this is your reward for transforming the ship for me."

Huh, Franky finally came to his senses and pointed to himself: "That is to say, I have to get on your boat?"

"Just report to the government, Straw Hat Crew "robbed the excellent boatman Franky in the capital of seven waters." Luffy said with a half-smile: "How? is it feasible?"

thump!

Iceberg immediately knelt down and bowed his head in a big salute: "I will never forget this kindness, Luffy Sama!"

Franky was full of reluctance, and finally, under Iceberg's persuasion, he

returned the drawings hidden in his body to Iceberg.

"So farewell, Mayor Iceberg."

After finishing the last thing, Luffy grabbed Franky, picked up Robin, and flew away from the window in the blink of an eye.

On the way back, Franky reluctantly accepted the reality.

He also understood that Iceberg and blueprints would be safe only if he got on the thief ship.

But he still decided to ask: "Since you have the power to resurrect Pluton, why don't you do it? Straw Hat Luffy!"

Luffy didn't answer.

Robin smiled and said: "Because my captain knows exactly where the real Pluton is.

Franky:

Sure enough, a pirate is a pirate!

"Hahaha, let's go, leave the capital of seven waters early, if we don't leave, trouble will come to our door."

Luffy laughed, and led the two back to the docking point of the ship.

All three ships are ready to sail.

"Wait, at least let me say goodbye to my little brothers..."

"There's no need, you'll be back here before long."

Leaving Franky on the Merry, Luffy took Robin to the Sonny.

"Set sail!"

Under an order from the captain, the ship slowly left the capital of seven waters where it had been staying for a month.

Holy Land, Mariejois.

boom!

Five Elders slapped the table angrily.

They looked at today's "World Economic News" with extremely ugly

faces.

"Morgans, the damn bastard, dares to write anything up!"

An elder, who was on crutches, said through gritted teeth.

The content on the news is too explosive.

The headline of the news read "Shock! Master of the Void Throne?

Amazing Discovery of the Revolutionary Dragon!".

News content adopts a question-and-answer manuscript.

In Dragon's answer, a person named "Imu" was clearly named, and he claimed that this person is the master behind the World government and the master of Five Elders.

Below this sentence, Morgans also kindly explained to the readers what is the Void Throne, what is the Creator, and what is the Five Elders... in short.

In the headquarters of the world government, in the depths of the City, there is a void throne that symbolizes "equality", which means that no one can rule over the country.

All kings are equal.

Celestial Dragons are gods and creators of the world, but they are also equal inside.

This is the concept promoted by the World government, and it is also the jurisprudence for this huge organization to rule the world.

Now this foundation has been shaken.

Five Elders didn't know what the kings of the major alliance countries would think after seeing this news, they just wanted to kill Morgans immediately.

"Notify the CPO immediately to stop the dissemination of this interview paper!"

Five Elders decisively issued an order: "Take Morgan under control!"

Quickly! If necessary, kill this person!"

"yes!"

The subordinates were ordered to go, and as soon as he left, Sengoku asked for an audience long after.

Five Elders, who were having a headache about this matter, also had to find time to meet Marshal Marine.

"What does this mean? Sengoku!"

Saint Saturn frowned at Sengoku's resignation letter.

"All responsibility for the Summit War rests with me. I am no longer qualified to be the Marshal. I request to step down."

Sengoku spoke with a calm face.

"What are you kidding, made a mess and now you want to slap your ass and leave it alone?"

"I nominate Admiral Aokiji as the next marshal."

Sengoku added.

Five Elders are furious, is this for the bastard Garp?

To take all the responsibility alone is to shield Garp.

An Elder holding sword, narrowed his eyes:

"Rejected. You can resign if you want to, first wipe your ass clean! And, regarding the next marshal, it is more appropriate to be Discussed properly.

"Akainu is too murderous." Sengoku insisted.

The old man with a goatee, his face turning black: "Pay attention to your tone, Sengoku, this is not something that should be decided by you!"

Hearing this, Sengoku didn't mention the next marshal.

"I will finish the follow-up. Now I will report three things to you."

"First, the original Seven Warlords of the Sea Straw Hat Luffy, and the original Seven Warlords of the Sea Gekko Moria, and Shichibukai

Jinbei...These three Shichibukai have left, and now there are three vacancies.

"Second, in this war, Naval Headquarters suffered heavy losses. In order to restore order as soon as possible, I propose to expand the conscription and recruit naval soldiers from all over the world."

"Third, the reconstruction of Naval Headquarters."

Hearing this, Five Elders was silent for a moment.

It is indeed a little trouble to lose three Shichibukai at once.

Pacifist's plans aren't really finished yet, at least for now a new Shichibukai is needed.

As for the second and third things, it's not a big deal, it's just asking for money.

Conscription costs money, of course, and it still costs a lot.

"The money will be given to you, but what about the prisoners in Impel down? Hasn't the list been counted yet?"

"Already counting, fortunately Warden Magellan is alive, just missing a leg.

"That bastard, with such a serious prison escape, don't think that he can still be the Warden!"

The Five Elders were furious.

Nonstop trouble!

It's all trash!

Sengoku was silent for a moment, and couldn't help asking:

"About Straw Hat Luffy.."

"I know" The blond Five Elders, Saint Peter interrupted him immediately:

"Don't ask more about things you shouldn't know. You go, and someone will send you the money later."

Sengoku frowned slightly.

He wondered why the Five Elders valued Straw Hat Luffy so much.

Yesterday, after Whitebeard's death, Vice Admiral Tsuru was given orders to chase down the Straw Hats regardless of the escaped Ace and the escaped prisoner.

However, although he didn't get an answer from Five Elders, he also realized the problem.

Maybe Garp knows something, Sengoku decided to ask him directly.

"Then, I will take my leave."

Sengoku turned and left.

After he left, there was a sudden silence in the office for a long time.

"Don't let Straw Hat Luffy live!"

"The Straw Hat Crew should be in the capital of seven waters. No, that guy is not an idiot. He dared to turn his back and save people in the Summit War. This was obviously premeditated, which shows that this kid is very scheming!"

"Let Akainu go?"

It was proposed, but rejected.

The Elder took out a phone bug and quickly dialed a number.

Not long after, an old man with a sword at his waist walked in.

He has a strange crescent haircut.

"I have something important for you."

Hearing this, the old man narrowed his eyes slightly.

"What important matter requires our God's Knights to dispatch?"

"You didn't even read yesterday's news, did you? Figarland Garling."

The Elder said in a deep voice: "During the Summit War, an unbearable traitor appeared. You don't have to ask any questions, just kill this person!"

As he spoke, he handed over a reward order to the other party.

Figarland Garling accepted the reward order, looked at the person in the photo, and fell into deep thought.

"Monkey D. Luffy....3.5 billion?"

"The actual combat power is comparable to Four Emperors! Don't be careless!"

"I know."

Discarding the arrest warrant casually, Figarland Garling turned and left.

The moment he turned around, the reward order floating in the air was cut into seven sections.

Five Elders was slightly taken aback.

This guy's sword skills have improved again?

As expected of the "King" who used to be active in the Valley of the Gods!

Supreme Commander of the Knights of God!

The real power of Celestial Dragons!

Внимание! Этот перевод, возможно, ещё не готов.

Его статус: идёт перевод

<http://tl.rulate.ru/book/100904/3898758>